



Universidade Federal de Santa Catarina
Centro de Comunicação e Expressão
Curso de Pós-Graduação em Letras - Inglês e Literatura Correspondente
Doutorado em Língua Inglesa e Linguística Aplicada

A LINGUISTIC INVESTIGATION INTO THE REPRESENTATION OF
THE LANDLESS MOVEMENT (MST) IN THE PRESS

por

FELIX AUGUSTO RODRIGUES

Tese submetida à Universidade Federal de Santa Catarina para obtenção do grau de
DOUTOR EM LETRAS

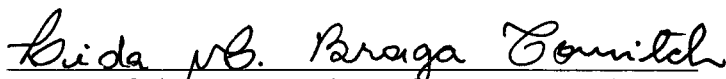
FLORIANÓPOLIS

Maior 2002

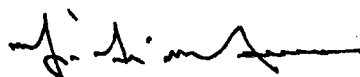
Esta Tese de Felix Augusto Rodrigues, intitulada A LINGUISTIC INVESTIGATION INTO THE REPRESENTATION OF THE LANDLESS MOVEMENT (MST) IN THE PRESS, foi julgada adequada e aprovada em sua forma final pelo programa de Pós-Graduação em Letras - Inglês e Literatura Correspondente da Universidade Federal de Santa Catarina, para fins de obtenção do grau de

DOUTOR EM LETRAS

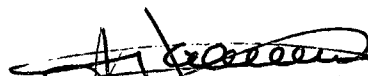
Área de Concentração: Inglês e Literatura Correspondente
Opção: Língua Inglesa e Linguística Aplicada



Professora Dra. Lêda Maria Braga Tomich
Coordenadora
Universidade Federal de Santa Catarina




Professor Dr. José Luiz Meurer
Orientador e Presidente
Universidade Federal de Santa Catarina



Professora Dra. Anna Maria Grammatico Carmagnani
Examinadora
Universidade de São Paulo

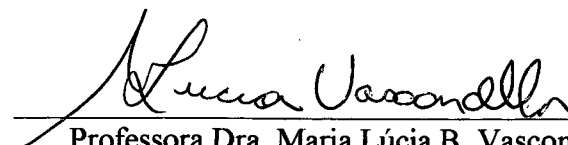
BANCA EXAMINADORA:



Professor Dr. Kanavillil Rajagopalan
Examinador
Universidade Estadual de Campinas



Professora Dra. Mailce Borges Mota Fortkamp
Examinadora
Universidade Federal de Santa Catarina



Professora Dra. Maria Lúcia B. Vasconcellos
Examinadora
Universidade Federal de Santa Catarina

For Genilda, Mariana, and Toby.
For my family
with love.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

I would like to express my gratitude to Professor Dr. José Luiz Meurer, my supervisor, for his encouragement, friendship, steady guidance and invaluable academic and professional support throughout the whole doctoral course of studies at Universidade Federal de Santa Catarina.

I would like to thank Professor Dr. John Corbett, from the University of Glasgow, for the goodwill and readiness to read one of the seminal working drafts of the project and for providing valuable advice and insightful ideas.

I am grateful to Luciany Margarida Silva for reading, commenting and giving suggestions on the analysis of Transitivity and Theme throughout the whole corpus.

The final version of this research has benefited from thoughtful comments and valuable suggestions provided by Professor Dr. Anna Maria Grammatico Carmagnani (Universidade de São Paulo – USP), Professor Dr. Kanavillil Rajagopalan (Universidade Estadual de Campinas – UNICAMP), Professor Dr. Mailce Borges Mota Fortkamp (Universidade Federal de Santa Catarina – UFSC), and Professor Dr. Maria Lúcia B. Vasconcellos (Universidade Federal de Santa Catarina – UFSC) to whom I would like to express my gratitude.

I would like to acknowledge the Departamento de Letras Estrangeiras Modernas at Universidade Federal da Paraíba for releasing me from my classes so that I could obtain this degree. Special thanks are due to my dearest friend Guadalupe de Melo Coutinho who promptly accepted to be my representative in the department for legal matters.

The research reported on here was made possible by CAPES/PICDT programme for granting me a scholarship which provided the financial support during the whole period of the course.

I cannot mention all those from whose ideas and support I have benefited in quite different ways, but I must mention some colleagues and friends especially Acácia Rosar, Ana Cecília, Aleksandra Piasecka-Till, Carla Lynn Reichmann, Débora Figueiredo, Eliana Limongi, Mariléa Mattos, Neide Cruz, Rosa Donato, Rosa Weingold Konder, Viviane Heberle, among others.

ABSTRACT

A LINGUISTIC INVESTIGATION INTO THE REPRESENTATION OF THE LANDLESS MOVEMENT (MST) IN THE PRESS

FELIX AUGUSTO RODRIGUES

UNIVERSIDADE FEDERAL DE SANTA CATARINA

2002

SUPERVISOR: DR. JOSÉ LUIZ MEURER

The main objective of this research is to investigate how the Press uses language to publicize the Landless Movement (MST) struggles for land reform in Brazil. Specifically, the study carries out a linguistic investigation into the representation of the MST in the Press with the purpose of identifying what linguistic devices are employed and how they are structured. It also aims at challenging the neutrality advocated by the Press which usually claims to solely report factual events. To do so, the way the Landless Movement is represented in Hard News Reports in *Folha de S. Paulo* and *The Guardian/The Observer* is investigated. This cross-cultural analysis facilitates the identification of biased discourse by considering two distinct sociolinguistic contexts in which print news are produced. I draw on Halliday's (1994) Systemic Functional Grammar to analyse the linguistic structure of the corpus. Also, through the socio-cognitive approach proposed by van Dijk (1998), I investigate how ideology manifests itself in the corpus so as to reveal which ideological positions are embedded in news discourse. The investigation reveals the existence of biased news discourse and sheds light on the way the Press utilizes linguistic resources for making meaning. The research contributes to the understanding of yet not fully explored issues concerning the way language is used as a meaning making device and, in this particular case, the way language is used to mediate between events/reality and audience/readership.

Number of pages: 366 pages

Number of words: 41.975 words

RESUMO

UMA INVESTIGAÇÃO LINGÜÍSTICA DA REPRESENTAÇÃO DO MOVIMENTO DOS TRABALHADORES RURAIS SEM TERRA (MST) NA IMPRENSA

FELIX AUGUSTO RODRIGUES

UNIVERSIDADE FEDERAL DE SANTA CATARINA

2002

ORIENTADOR: DR. JOSÉ LUIZ MEURER

O principal objetivo desta pesquisa é investigar como a imprensa utiliza a linguagem para tornar pública a luta do Movimento dos Trabalhadores Rurais Sem Terra (MST) pela reforma agrária no Brasil. Especificamente, este estudo desenvolve uma investigação lingüística da representação do MST na imprensa com o objetivo de identificar que artifícios lingüísticos são empregados e como estes são estruturados. Este estudo também objetiva questionar a neutralidade defendida pela imprensa que frequentemente alega apenas relatar factualmente os acontecimentos. Para tal, investigo a forma como o MST é representado nos Hard News Reports da *Folha de S. Paulo* e do *The Guardian/The Observer*. Os contextos sociolingüísticos distintos onde as reportagens são produzidas facilitam, através de uma análise intercultural, a identificação de discurso tendencioso. Para investigar o discurso jornalístico da *Folha de S. Paulo* e do *The Guardian/The Observer*, emprego a Gramática Sistemática Funcional de Halliday (1994), o que permite a análise da estrutura lingüística do corpus. Também analiso, através da abordagem sócio-cognitiva de van Dijk (1998), como a ideologia se manifesta no corpus, com o objetivo de revelar de quais posições ideológicas a construção do discurso jornalístico está imbuida. A investigação revela a existência de discurso tendencioso e elucida a forma como a imprensa utiliza recursos lingüísticos para construir significado. A pesquisa contribui para a compreensão de temas ainda não totalmente explorados relativos ao modo de como a linguagem é utilizada como um instrumento gerador de significado e, neste caso em particular, o modo como a linguagem faz a mediação entre eventos/realidade e público/leitor.

Número de páginas: 366 páginas

Número de palavras: 41.975 palavras

**A LINGUISTIC INVESTIGATION INTO THE
REPRESENTATION OF
THE LANDLESS MOVEMENT (MST) IN THE PRESS**

by

Felix Augusto Rodrigues

Chapter I Introduction: Scope of the Study

1.1	Initial Remarks	1
1.2	Statement of the Problem	2
1.3	Objective of the Research	4
1.4	Theoretical Framework: An Overview	8
1.5	Corpus	10
1.6	Research Procedures	11
1.7	Organization of the Thesis	12
	Notes	14

**Chapter II Representation of the Landless Movement in Hard
News Reports: Ideational and Textual Perspectives**

2.1	Initial Remarks	15
	2.1.1 Story, Narrative, News, News Story: How do They Relate?	16
	2.1.2 The Generic Structure of Hard News Reports: An Overview	19

Chapter III The Invisible Machinery Behind the Landless Movement Representation

3.1	Initial Remarks	74
3.2	On Language and Ideology	76
	3.2.1 Classical Views of Ideology	76
	3.2.2 The Socio-Cognitive Nature of Ideology	82
3.3	Representation: What is it About?	93
3.4	Ideology and Representation: The Building Blocks of the Landless Movement Representation in <i>Folha de S. Paulo</i>	100
	3.4.1 Polarization	100
	3.4.2 Expression and Suppression of Information	103
	3.4.3 Stereotype	107
	3.4.4 Lexical Choice	111
3.5	Ideology and Representation: Looking into the Landless Movement Representation from a Foreign Perspective in <i>The Guardian/The Observer</i>	123
	3.5.1 Polarization	123
	3.5.2 Expression and Suppression of Information	126
	3.5.3 Stereotype	132
	3.5.4 Lexical Choice	134
3.6	Concluding Remarks	139
	Notes	141

2.2	Systemic Functional Linguistics: An Introduction	25
2.3	The System of Transitivity	32
2.3.1	Foreword	32
2.3.2	Material Process	34
2.3.3	Mental Process	35
2.3.4	Relational Process	35
2.3.5	Behavioural Process	38
2.3.6	Verbal Process	38
2.3.7	Existential Process	39
2.4	The System of Theme	41
2.4.1	Foreword	41
2.4.2	Theme + Rheme: The System	42
2.4.3	Types of Theme	43
2.4.4	Markedness: Marked and Unmarked Theme	44
2.4.5	Theme + Rheme and Given + New Related	47
2.5	Analysis of the corpus: <i>Folha de S. Paulo</i> and <i>The Guardian/The Observer</i>	51
2.5.1	Representing the Facts: Transitivity	55
2.5.2	Organizing the Message: Theme + Rheme	66
2.6	Concluding Remarks	71
	Notes	73

Chapter IV Final Remarks

4.1 Agrarian Reform in the Crossfire: Summary of the Main Findings	143
4.2 Implications of the Study	145
4.3 Limitations of the Study and Suggestions for Further Research	146
References	151
Appendices	161
Appendix A: Sample Text 1 and Sample Text 2	161
Appendix B: Dictionary-Based Definitions for the Concept of Ideology	162
Appendix C: Lexical Choice in <i>Folha de S. Paulo</i> and <i>The Guardian/The Observer</i>	164
Appendix D: The Corpus	168
Appendix E: Corpus Analysed for Transitivity and Theme	170

List of Figures

Chapter I	Introduction: Scope of the Study	
Figure 1.1	Language as the realization of social context	9
Chapter II	Representation of the Landless Movement in Hard News Reports: Ideational and Textual Perspectives	
Figure 2.1	Main generic structural components of Hard News Reports	24
Figure 2.2	Position of the clause within an eight-rank hierarchy model	30
Figure 2.3	The System of Transitivity basic framework	33
Figure 2.4	Process types in English	37
Figure 2.5	Process types, their meanings and key participants	40
Figure 2.6	Overall occurrences of process types in the corpus	54
Figure 2.7	Overall occurrences of unmarked and marked Themes in the corpus	67
Chapter III	The Invisible Machinery Behind the Landless Movement Representation	
Figure 3.1	The social nature of human beings and the role of language	83
Figure 3.2	A socio-cognitive model at work	84
Figure 3.3	The social nature of human beings and the role of the language-ideology component	86
Figure 3.4	The pivotal role of ideology	88
Figure 3.5	The innermost structure of ideology in relation to discourse	90
Figure 3.6	The Brazilian and the MST flags	94
Figure 3.7	The USSR flag	96
Figure 3.8	Relationship between Language-Ideology and Discourse-Representation composites	97
Figure 3.9	The place of discourse-representation	99

List of Tables

Chapter II	Representation of the Landless Movement in Hard News Reports: Ideational and Textual Perspectives	
Table 2.1	General Features of <i>Folha de S. Paulo</i> and <i>The Guardian/The Observer</i>	52
Table 2.2	An outline of the occurrences of Material, Mental, Relational, Behavioural, Verbal, and Existential processes in <i>Folha de S. Paulo</i> and <i>The Guardian/The Observer</i>	53
Table 2.3	The occurrences of Material, Mental, Relational, Behavioural, Verbal, and Existential processes in relation to the Landless Movement and the Brazilian Government	56
Table 2.4	Occurrences of unmarked and marked Thematic Structures in the corpus	68
Chapter III	The Invisible Machinery Behind the Landless Movement Representation	
Table 3.1	Occurrences of <i>invadir/to invade</i> and <i>ocupar/to occupy</i> in <i>Folha de S. Paulo</i> and <i>The Guardian/The Observer</i> Corpus	135

Um dia a vida surgiu na terra. A terra tinha com a vida um cordão umbilical. A vida e a terra. A terra era grande e a vida pequena. (...) A vida foi crescendo e a terra ficando menor, não pequena. Cercada, a terra virou coisa de alguém, não de todos, não comum. Virou a sorte de alguns e a desgraça de tantos. Na história foi tema de revoltas, revoluções, transformações. A terra e a cerca. A terra e o grande proprietário. A terra e o sem terra. E a morte.

Herbert de Sousa

Our ability to represent and simulate reality implies that we can appropriate the order of existence and bring it to serve human purposes. A good simulation, be it a religious myth or a scientific theory, gives us a sense of mastery over our experience. To represent something symbolically, as we do when we speak or write, is somehow to capture it, thus making it one's own. But with this appropriation comes the realization that we have denied the immediacy of reality and that in creating a substitute we have but spun another thread in the web of our grand illusion.

Heinz R. Pagels. In: *The Dreams of Reason*

CHAPTER I

INTRODUCTION:

SCOPE OF THE STUDY

With words (...) we influence and to an enormous extent *control future events*. It is for this reason that writers write; preachers preach; employers, parents, and teachers scold; propagandists send out news releases; politicians give speeches. All of them, for various reasons, are trying to influence our conduct – sometimes for our own good, sometimes for their own.

Samuel Ichiy  Hayakawa. In: "The Language of Social Control"

1.1 Initial Remarks

During the second half of the 20th century linguists turned much of their attention to the fact that language pervades almost all aspects of human life and plays, therefore, a pivotal role within society. This, in turn, allows social institutions such as school, government, law, social movements, the media, etc., to make wide use of linguistic resources, among others, to change and/or maintain their *status quo*.

In Brazil, like in many other so called developing third-world countries, there has been a great deal of disagreement between government social policies and social action movements over a number of tough social issues among which, the agrarian reform. The focus of this research concerns mainly how the Press uses language to portray the conflicting struggles between the Landless Movement (MST)¹ and the Brazilian Government (BG).

1.2 Statement of the Problem

The Brazilian agrarian reform is a current issue which has kept both the government and pro-agrarian-reform social movements, particularly the Brazilian Landless Movement – MST, in a sort of continuous state of war which frequently ends up with fierce physical fighting between the parties involved. On the one hand, the government claims that there has been wide scale land distributions among the landless all over the country; on the other, the main landless representative organization – the MST – denies the existence of effective governmental policies towards the problem. Given the complex nature of such deep-seated social dilemma, I present a brief historical review of the agrarian reform movements in Brazil in order to set the scenery for the coming discussions and analyses.

The large concentration of productive and particularly unproductive stretches of land in the hands of few landowners as a way to speculate on the profitable land market has caused a long-lasting problem concerning land distribution in Brazil. It constitutes indeed one of the most serious and deep-rooted social problems that seems to defy either short or long term solutions. I provide here a short translated account of the origins of the *Movimento dos Trabalhadores Rurais Sem Terra – MST*.²

The conflicts involving disputes about land possession is an old issue in the history of the Brazilian people, most of the times omitted and usually distorted by the official version (see Chapter II and Chapter III, *passim*). Until the end of 1800, the indians were the first to try to protect their land against the colonizers. Later, the slaves in their *quilombos* tried to delimit stretches of land of their own. Also fighting for the right to possess and work on their own land, *Antônio Conselheiro* (*Canudos* movement), *Monge José Maria* (*Contestado* movement), and *Lampião* (*Cangaço* movement) were leaders of movements by the end of the 19th century and the

beginning of the 20th century which had fairly similar objectives as those advocated by the MST. More recently, between 1930 and 1940, landowners and squatters performed violent armed disputes about arable land. During the 1950's and 1960's there appeared a number of well-organized rural movements such as *Ligas Camponesas*, *União dos Lavradores e Trabalhadores Agrícolas do Brasil*, and *Movimento dos Agricultores Sem Terra*. The *Ligas Camponesas*, the MST antecedent, created in 1955 by João Firmino and other 139 hired man who worked at Galiléia Sugar Mill in the northeastern Brazilian state of Pernambuco, was originally named *Sociedade Agrícola e Pecuária dos Plantadores de Pernambuco*, and aimed exclusively at demanding the right for the rural workers to have a coffin and a place to be buried. By that time, the dead were mourned in a coffin provided by local authorities, but it had to be handed back after the burial ceremony so that it could be used by other people. The corpses were buried in a burial ground for paupers. These movements, however, disappeared as the result of the dictatorial military governmental system introduced in Brazil in the early 1960's which imprisoned, murdered, and exiled most of their leaders and consequently allowed the expansion of the *latifundium* and the eventual expulsion of those possessing small stretches of land.

It was only after the decline of the military government, in the late 1970's, that there emerged rural movements as a reaction against the government economic policies towards farming activities. These policies compelled landowners to dismiss the majority of their tenants causing a massive exodus from the countryside to the main cities all over the country. By that time, there already existed isolated groups fighting against the government apathy towards this explicit, increasing social problem and demanding urgent political measures to refrain the devastating consequences of such migration for the Brazilian society as a whole and particularly

for those who needed land to earn their living. It was by the end of the 1970's in an encampment called *Encruzilhada Natalino* in the city of *Ronda Alta* in the north of the state of *Rio Grande do Sul*, and in the city of *Mastro* in the west of the state of *Paraná*, both states in the south of Brazil, that the *Movimento dos Trabalhadores Rurais Sem Terra – MST* was first thought of and came into existence. However, it was only in 1984, during the nationwide coordinated actions, that the leaders officially founded the movement, establishing its objectives and strategies for future actions. The three main objectives of the MST are as follows: the land itself, agrarian reform, and a fairer society.

Nowadays, there exists much controversy concerning the MST's actual intentions. Some support the movement pointing out its achievements and the relevant role it plays in the Brazilian democratic society. Others attack it, criticizing its violent actions and arguing that the movement has deviated from its main original objectives and that its members have become hooligans and criminals. It is within this scenario that the present research is developed. Therefore, it is highly relevant to study the Landless Movement not only because it is nowadays the most active Brazilian social movement, but also because it is a top issue for the media and thus extremely newsworthy.

1.3 Objective of the Research

The struggle for better living conditions seems to be a recurrent issue in capitalist societies. The objectives of those who possess the means of production do not usually coincide with the objectives of the labour force. Most labourers are frequently deprived of the facilities available for those in the higher reaches of the

social scale. The dispute between capital and labour is a venue for the industry of news which widely publicizes antagonistic social issues.

The radio, the television, and the Press form one of the most powerful tripartite institutions in modern society – the mass media. The media, however, do not usually report events the way they actually happen for many reasons (see Chapter II and Chapter III, *passim*), and thus provides readers with only a partial view of the events reported. In so doing, news text producers are likely to persuade audiences, either unconsciously or intentionally, through the use of biased discourse.

The central focus of this research concerns mainly how the Press – “(...) one of the most influential textual domains in contemporary society (...)” (White, 1997, p. 101) – uses language to publicize the ongoing struggles between the Landless Movement and the Brazilian Government. In other words, this thesis intends to carry out a linguistic investigation into the representation of the MST in the Press. More specifically, I investigate print news reporting the Brazilian Landless Movement activity in order to identify what linguistic devices are at work and how they are structured when such issue is depicted in Hard News Reports (on Hard News Reports see Chapter II, section 2.1.2).

In my research, I investigate Hard News Reports as a kind of public discourse which plays a crucial role in the organisation of social groups and institutions while linguistically reproducing social events. The specific objectives of the thesis are as follows:

01. To examine how language functions as a means to construct social representation(s) of the Landless Movement in the Press,
02. To investigate how the social reality involving the MST is depicted in Hard News Reports,

03. To analyse how Hard News Reports are ideologically constructed, i.e., how particular perspectives, positions, biases, values, beliefs, etc., are embedded in the print reports of social events about the Landless Movement,
04. To cross-examine Hard News Reports from two distinct cultures in order to identify what and how linguistic structures are used to account for the same news issue and how social representations, relations, and ideologies are constructed from a foreign social perspective.

The main guiding questions used to carry out the analysis of the corpus are:

01. What linguistic resources are used in the production of Hard News Reports regarding the Landless movement?
02. How is social reality (re)created in the Press?
 - 2a. What kind of lexicogrammatical structures are employed in the construction of a social reality?
 - 2b. What kind of social relations are there between the entities concerned?
 - 2c. What kind of social reality is established?
03. How does the language of Hard News Reports encode ideological positions?
04. What version of the social conflict is depicted in the Hard News Reports, both in the Brazilian and in the British newspapers?

The relevance of such a study lies in the fact that an inherent Brazilian social problem, which is frequently investigated from the perspective of sociological rationales (e.g., Stedile e Fernandes, 1999), is here examined through linguistic principles. This allows for a more acute examination in that not only societal events

are taken into account, but more specifically the medium through which they are verbalized.

Therefore, a sociolinguistic analysis of print news discourse which depicts the current state of contending forces, on the one hand the Landless Movement's demands for an equitable distribution of productive land, and, on the other, the Brazilian governmental policies towards land allotment, is likely to reveal insightful connections between news producers, text and social context. In other words, the social combined with the linguistic aspect of the study may unveil instances of clashing social relations, values, and ideologies, which are likely to be present in the news representations of this specific or of any ongoing social conflict.

Among the myriad of ways language is used as a means to manipulate individuals, mass communication seems to be a most fruitful territory in which language exerts far-reaching influence. On the one hand, if skilfully used, language may become a powerful device in order to promote social equality and justice; on the other hand, it may be used as a deadly weapon particularly in the hands of those in search for power or fighting for power maintenance.

As the result of my research I expect (i) to shed some light on the way the Brazilian Landless Movement is depicted in the Press, (ii) to provide an account of the powerful and influential role of the Press in the Brazilian and the British contemporary society, (iii) to stress the close relationship between linguistic structure and social structure, (iv) to highlight the relevance of media studies, in this particular case the Press, in order to unveil the linguistic mechanisms used by newsmakers to represent socio-cultural events, and (v) to reveal the biased nature of print-mediated communication and its tendency to reflect and reinforce dominant values and ideologies. Moreover, I expect the research may be of interest for scholars involved in

the teaching/learning of languages, social and cultural studies, journalism and media studies, among others.

1.4 Theoretical Framework: An Overview

An investigation into the representation of the Brazilian Landless Movement in the Press requires a theoretical apparatus that provides the tools with which an analysis of an authentic corpus becomes feasible. In order to search for answers to the questions and to achieve the objectives posed above and to account for the bi-directional relationship between language and society, I make use of two main current approaches to the study of language.

First I draw on and then apply Systemic Functional Linguistics, mainly the Hallidayan Systemic Functional Grammar (Halliday, 1994), as the main theoretical and analytical tool to look into the corpus. It has been an instrument which allows for the social semiotic analysis of the grammatical structures of any authentic text, in this case Hard News Reports. Halliday's central concern is that language is inherently a social entity which is motivated and informed by the context to express social meanings.

Following from this, I employ the principles of Critical Discourse Analysis (Fairclough, 1989, 1992) as the theoretical and analytical method which allows for the practical examination and criticism of discourse, i.e., how language is used to create, reflect, and represent social relations. In doing so, I consider the ideological component (van Dijk, 1998) as central to any social representation, particularly in modern capitalist societies. In this case, the aim is to question the notion of unbiased language used in the production of news discourse whose neutrality is usually advocated by the Press. Although this study is, by its very nature, founded on the

notions of Critical Discourse Analysis, a discussion of its tenets is not carried out here since it is taken for granted that the whole research *is* itself its straightforward realization.

The underlying assumptions behind Systemic Functional Linguistics, Critical Discourse Analysis, and Ideology, converge in that all of them are mainly concerned with language in actual use, i.e., how language and social context bi-directionally interact in such a way that language shapes, is shaped by, and may ultimately reshape the social context. Figure 1.1 captures the interrelationship between language and social context.

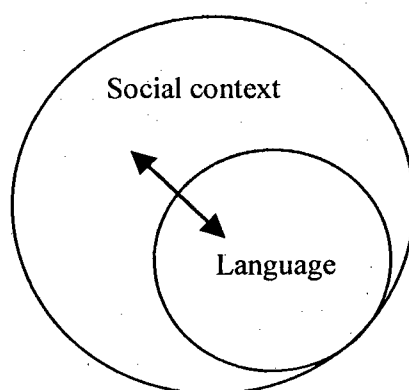


Fig. 1.1 - Language as the realization of social context
After Martin (1997, p. 4)

The theoretical framework, however, is not intended to be used as a theoretical straitjacket. Its scope takes the research far beyond to encompass another central feature, viz., the interface between language and society. In other words, the theoretical background does not accord primary importance to the linguistic aspect of the research itself; it also captures social phenomena that allow for an investigation of the intertwined nature of language in relation to its social milieu.

1.5 The Corpus

The corpus consists of Hard News Reports about the Brazilian Landless Movement taken from a Brazilian and a British quality newspaper. The corpus was randomly collected from 01 January 1999 to 31 December 2000. Within this period a total of 24 texts were selected – 12 texts from the Brazilian newspaper and 12 texts from the British newspaper. The number of words in each text was the criteria adopted for the selection, i.e., each text had to have no more than 1500 and not less than 200 words (see Table 1, Appendix D).

The newspapers selected as the sources of the corpus are *Folha de S. Paulo* and *The Guardian/The Observer*³. The very first reason to choose *Folha de S. Paulo* and *The Guardian/The Observer* concerns their availability. *Folha de S. Paulo* is unquestionably the Brazilian newspaper which can be easily found in the majority of newsagents all over the country and *The Guardian/The Observer* was the only mainstream foreign on-line newspaper whose archive was tax free at the time of gathering the corpus. In spite of these two practical reasons they had to conform to the following criteria concerning their main features:

01. The newspaper's position within the print media sphere as one of the papers ranked among the highest in circulation in the country,
02. The newspaper's nationwide distribution which makes it a potentially and widely read paper,
03. The newspaper's coverage of a large number of relevant news items,
04. The newspaper's detailed and extensive coverage of home and overseas news,
05. The newspaper's notoriety for being one of the most credited and influential national papers,

06. The newspaper's long-standing reputation for being one of the best daily quality papers in the country, and
07. The newspaper's well established image before its readership.

Both *Folha de S. Paulo*⁴ and *The Guardian/The Observer*⁵ fall within the criteria established and thus are likely to be two samples of print news discourse to provide the corpus with substantial material to be analysed.

The relevance to study this Brazilian social problem in a foreign newspaper lies in the fact that the issue under study is seen from another socio-cultural perspective other than our own. Seen thus, the cross-cultural analysis of the Brazilian Landless Movement in the Press may uncover sociolinguistic components otherwise impossible to be observed, since the interpretation of the reality reported in hard news rests largely upon the set of knowledge, values, and beliefs inherently in-built in the sociolinguistic construct; in other words, reality lies in the perception of the beholder.

1.6 Research Procedures

The research procedures consist of two main steps. The first step is threefold as follows. First, I provide a concise account of the way newsworthy events unfold to make news stories. Second, I look into the main generic structural components of Hard News Reports, the site where hard news stories are publicized, by examining its place and role within the multi-generic environment it is part of, i.e., the Press. And third, I carry out a structural systemic-functional analysis of the corpus – via the use of the systems of Transitivity and Theme – in order to examine news language as social semiotic. In so doing, I identify the functions of the major linguistic components at work in the genre and in turn the roles played by the participants in the

news stories as the result of the application of the Hallidayan Systemic Functional Grammar which provides a perspective of the representation of the Landless Movement in the corpus.

As the second step, I investigate the linguistic mechanisms concerning the interrelationship between language, ideology, and representation and how they operate in order to construe agendas concerning social relations and news producers stances embedded in the linguistic discourse of Hard News Reports and their respective socio-cultural contexts. In view of this, the cross-cultural component is also of invaluable relevance for the research. The contrastive study of the Landless Movement representation in a Brazilian and a British quality paper is likely to disclose sociolinguistic aspects which are only possible to be detected if distinct newsmaking practices are carefully considered.

The research steps, however, do not actually develop in a strictly compartmentalised way and there are differences as well as similarities involving the theoretical approaches, which are yet to be explored elsewhere. Nevertheless, the proposed procedures above serve, in practice, as a broad guiding line and each step constitutes a starting point from which specific discussions develop.

1.7 Organization of the Thesis

This Chapter introduces the thesis by providing a general description of the main steps, thus establishing the way through which the research develops. Chapter 2 and Chapter 3 give a systematic presentation of the theoretical framework which is the foundation of the thesis. Immediately after each theoretical review there follows the analysis of the corpus. Chapter 2 gives an overall picture of the way an event becomes a news story and then provides a concise sketch of the main structural components of

Hard News Reports in order to identify its main features and, in turn, set its place within the complex textual sphere of the Press so as to establish the environment where the Landless Movement is represented. Following from this, the chapter provides a general description of the Hallidayan Functional Grammar and brings into focus the System of Transitivity and the System of Theme which are used in the structural analysis of the corpus – *Folha de S. Paulo* and *The Guardian/The Observer*. Chapter 3 shifts the focus to briefly discuss the development of the concept of ideology through time and sets the agenda for the analysis of the representation of the Landless Movement in the Press through the tripartite bond between language, ideology, and representation. It is also concerned with a cross-cultural analysis of the corpus in which the texts from *Folha de S. Paulo* and *The Guardian/The Observer* are cross-examined. Chapter 4 discusses the main findings and their implications for the study of language, media, and society. It also points out some relevant aspects that were left unanalysed and which are potential items to be developed as further research.

Notes

1. The term 'Landless Movement' is a free translation for *Movimento dos Trabalhadores Rurais Sem Terra* widely known in Brazil and abroad by its acronym *MST*. Landless Movement and *MST* are used here interchangeably.
2. Its full version can be found in *Folha de S. Paulo* "Ligas lutavam por morte digna" Quinta-feira, 2 de novembro de 2000. Cotidiano C4.; at <http://www.sanet.com.br/~semterra/> – História do MST: "Elementos fundamentais da História do MST"; at <http://www.estado.com.br/english/semterra/msteng5.html> – Origins: "MST rose in the 80's, supported by the Church and the Worker's Party"; and at <http://www.estado.com.br/edicao/encarte/terra/terra1.html> – "MST - O filão da terra".
3. *The Guardian*, one of the oldest British daily qualities, was founded in 1825 as *the Manchester Guardian*, and is published on Sundays as *The Observer*.
4. Table 2, in Appendix D, lists the five Brazilian quality papers which appear in The World Press, an on-line press service which congregates and provides access to 1,077 daily papers from 192 countries. The information was searched at <http://www.theworldpress.com/ru/brazil.htm> on Friday, 12 April 2001, at 11 am. The table also shows a comparison, in terms of circulation, between *Folha de S. Paulo*, *Gazeta Mercantil*, *Jornal do Brasil*, *O Estado de São Paulo*, and *O Globo*. It should be noted that only *Folha de S. Paulo* provides, in its hard version, the total number of copies issued in each edition.
5. Table 3, in Appendix D, shows a comparison between *The Guardian/The Observer* and five other British quality papers – *The Daily Telegraph*, *Financial Times*, *The Independent*, *The Scotsman*, and *The Times*. This is an abridged version of the ABC National Newspaper Data for the month of February 2001 and includes both quality papers and tabloids. In the simplified table, *The Guardian/The Observer* ranks between the six British National Quality papers in terms of overall total average net circulation. This information is supplied by the Audit Bureau of Circulation, an on-line service which provides free access to all the current circulation, distribution and attendance data for over 3,400 ABC certified Magazines, Newspapers, Exhibitions and Directories. It was searched at <http://www.abc.org.uk/cgi-bin/gen5?runprog=abc&noc=y&type=> on Friday, 12 April 2001, at 11.30am. Further information can also be obtained from <http://www.guardian.co.uk/guardian/article/0,5814,184281,00.html> and from <http://www.observer.co.uk/article/0,5814,211601,00.html>

CHAPTER II

REPRESENTATION OF THE LANDLESS MOVEMENT

IN HARD NEWS REPORTS:

IDEATIONAL AND TEXTUAL PERSPECTIVES

‘When *I* use a word,’ Humpty Dumpty said, in rather a scornful tone, ‘it means just what I choose it to mean – neither more nor less.’

‘The question is,’ said Alice, ‘whether you *can* make words mean different things.’

‘The question is,’ said Humpty Dumpty, ‘which is to be master – that’s all.’

Alice was much too puzzled to say anything, so after a minute Humpty Dumpty began again.

‘They’ve a temper most of them – particularly verbs, they’re the proudest – adjectives you can do anything with, but not verbs – however, *I* can manage the whole lot! Impenetrability! That’s what *I* say!’

Lewis Carroll. In: *Through the Looking Glass*.

2.1 Initial Remarks

The main objective of this chapter is threefold. I start with a brief discussion about the way events are turned into print news stories by news producers and then I provide a concise exposition of the generic structure of Hard News Reports by elaborating on the main recurrent components of the genre. These overviews are essential because they depict the very structural nature of Hard News Reports. Finally, I move into the major issue, i.e., the investigation into the linguistic structure of the

corpus which is carried out by employing the principles of Systemic Functional Linguistics. The tripartite configuration of the chapter, particularly the third part, provides the basis for the subsequent analysis of the news discourse representation of the Landless Movement in *Folha de S. Paulo* and *The Guardian/The Observer*.

Right at the outset of this section and before getting into the analysis of the representation of the Landless Movement in Hard News Reports, I find it necessary to pose the following questions: (1) How do the concepts of story, narrative, news, and news story relate?, (2) What is a Hard News Report?, (3) What is it used for?, and (4) What are its main generic structural components? I deal with question (1) in 2.1.1 and with questions (2), (3), and (4) in 2.1.2.

2.1.1 Story, Narrative, News, News Story: How do they relate?

There exists a very close relationship between the notions of story, narrative, news, and news story, in this order. To a large extent, they are so inextricably intertwined that it seems to be impossible to try to explain one without making direct reference to the others. Thus, to explain the structure of a News Story, for instance, it would require previous conscious or unconscious knowledge of what News, Narrative, and Story are all about.

One of the most common ways to hold one's attention to what a speaker/writer has to say lies on his/her ability to verbalize and put across ideas effectively. A powerful device widely used is the all-too-familiar storytelling. A story, according to Crowther (1993, p. 901), is an "(...) account of past events, incidents, etc. (...), [and/or an] account of invented or imagined events, etc. (...)." This is probably the most frequent way through which most of us communicate; we are always talking about someone or something. But in order to tell a story – be it a tale, an anecdote, a novel, a

joke, a biography, a news bulletin, performed on TV, at the cinema or in the theatre, reported in a newspaper – the storyteller makes use of narrative, a rhetorical mode (Meurer, 2000, pp. 162) which aims at organising the sequence of events and the development of the story-line as a whole. At the very heart of a narration lie two main components – the happening and the character(s) involved in the episode. Eschholz and Rosa (1988, p. 25) state that “In its broadest sense, narration includes all writing that provides an account of an event or a series of events.” Crowther (1993, pp. 596-597) defines narrative as a “(...) spoken or written account of events; story, (...) story-telling”. In other words, narration and storytelling are two sides of the same coin, i.e., whenever a story is told, it is done so via narration and whenever a narrative occurs that is because a story of some kind is being told. Corbett (1997, p. 128) pertinently states that

Narrative might be thought of, most simply, as story-telling, and it is important at the outset to stress that story-telling is not confined to novels and shorter prose: many poems tell stories, most jokes tell stories, and non-fictional genres, such as *press reports*, television and radio commercials, and even the experimental passages of scientific papers, also tell stories – stories which make an additional claim to veracity. [emphasis added]

A narrative, according to Eschholz and Rosa (1988, pp. 26-34), typically has four main features: (i) context, (ii) point of view, (iii) selection of detail, and (iv) organization.

In order to establish the context, i.e. the setting of the story, the narrator, or storyteller, has to make it clear ‘when’ the event(s) happened, ‘where’ the event(s) happened, and ‘to whom’ the event(s) happened. The context provides therefore the core components from which the story develops and on which the subsequent events are grounded. The relationship between the narrator and the development of the event(s) of the narrative depends on his/her involvement with the story-line and the

characters, i.e., the point of view he/she adopts to tell the story. The storyteller may take on the persona of a character while narrating a story about his/her own personal experience – the first-person point of view. On the other hand, he/she may take an omniscient position before the event(s) narrated. In this case, the narrator is a nonparticipant and plays the role of an all-knowing eyewitness who is able to see into the minds of the characters in the story and to interfere in the course of the events – the third-person point of view. In this kind of narrative, there is no involvement between the storyteller and the characters in that he/she does not express his/her opinions nor emotions. The narrator merely recounts or reports the events witnessed or just heard about. These are the two most common points of view, but the narrator may want to adopt the point of view of the reader or of another character in the narration; he/she may move from a first-person narration to a third-person narration and vice-versa; and he/she may even allow the characters to tell the story themselves while representing their stream of consciousness (Crystal, 1987, p. 78; Corbett, 1997, pp. 151-163). The right choice of what to emphasize and what to leave out also plays a crucial part in the construction of a consistent story. By eliminating needless and insignificant events and details, the narrator concentrates on the main unfolding plot of the story. The narrative structure consists basically of a beginning, a middle, and an ending and the course of events typically follows a chronological sequence. This is the typical organization of a narrative because in narrating a story the reconstruction usually follows the account of connected events in order of happening.

A story, which is accomplished through narration, is also defined as a “(...) report of an item of news in a newspaper; article (...). event, situation or material suitable for this (...)” Crowther (1993, p. 901). Manser and Turton (1987, p. 702) also define a story as “(...) (the material of) a journalist’s account of an event.” In this

respect, it seems reasonable to claim the existence of a linking-line connecting the notions of story and narrative, discussed above, and that of news within the sphere of the radio and the television broadcasting and the newspapers – the news media. So, what is the meaning of news? Crowther (1993, p. 604) defines news as “(...) new or fresh information; report(s) of recent events (...) person, thing, event etc that is (interesting enough to be) reported as news (...)” This definition highlights that for a story to become a potential news item it has to be noteworthy, i.e., it has to provide previously unknown information, arouse curiosity, and hold the attention of the target audience. In other words, it has to be newsworthy. A news story, therefore, is the narration of an accredited story which is considered relevant enough to be publicized as news.

2.1.2 The Generic Structure of Hard News Reports: An Overview

The word *genre*, which has been widely used to refer to a specific type of musical or literary composition, is a French term that derives from the Latin word *genus*, which essentially means *kind* or *type* (Manser and Turton, 1987, p. 291; Childers and Hentzi, 1995, p. 126). This concept, already in existence by the time of Greek philosophers Plato (429-347 BC) and Aristotle (384-322 BC), has today a much wider scope encompassing not only literary text types but also non-literary ones. During the last fifteen years or so, many linguists all over the world have drawn their attention towards the ancient concept of genre which remained out of the scene for a long time, but which is nowadays likely to play a much wider relevant role for the study of both spoken and written texts.

Language and literature students, in particular, might be familiar with the most widely recognized literary genres such as novel, poetry, short story, and essays, for

instance. The contemporary notion of genre, however, has a much wider scope and embodies not only literary, but also non-literary texts. In other words, courtroom speeches, letters of recommendation, user manuals, job interviews, religious liturgy, textbooks, jokes, gossips, radio phone-ins, face-to-face conversations, tourist brochures, party programs, press releases, sports commentary, news stories, legal documents, academic monographs, Hard News Reports, among a myriad of other examples, are all rhetorical forms of social actions and interactions which can be identified as non-literary genres.

Swales (1990, pp. 45-54) provides a working definition of genre by characterizing his point of view of the concept as follows: "1. A genre is a class of communicative events. 2. The principal criterial feature that turns a collection of communicative events into a genre is some shared set of communicative purpose. 3. Exemplars or instances of genres vary in their prototypicality. 4. The rationale behind a genre establishes constraints on allowable contributions in terms of their content, positioning and form. 5. A discourse community's nomenclature for genres is an important source of insight." Swales (1990, p. 58) finally offers a definition for genre when he states that

A genre comprises a class of *communicative events*, the members of which share some set of *communicative purposes*. These purposes are recognized by the expert members of the parent *discourse community*, and thereby constitute the rationale for the genre. This rationale shapes the schematic structure of the discourse and influences and constrains choice of content and style. Communicative purpose is both a privileged criterion and one that operates to keep the scope of a genre as here conceived narrowly focused on comparable rhetorical action. In addition to purpose, exemplars of a genre exhibit various patterns of similarity in terms of structure, style, content and intended audience. [emphasis added]

Within the multiple-context sphere of print media, there exists a wide variety of genres commonly found in most mainstream newspapers. It is not difficult to

identify discrete sections such as Editorials, Classifieds, Letters-to-the-Editor, Sports, Health/Fitness, Advertising, Business/Financial, Police, Profiles, Opinion, Politics, Fashion, Agriculture, Lifestyle, Computers, Features, Arts, Education, Entertainment, Science/Technology, World/International Affairs, among others, each consisting of discrete generic structures and aiming at accomplishing specific communicative functions in the newspaper.

Hard News Report is one of the obligatory genres to be found within the textual intermingling environment of most quality newspapers. "Journalists and media researchers both recognize hard news as the core news product (...)" (Bell, 1991, p. 14. See also Caldas-Coulthard, 1997, p. 36). Hard News Reports have typically a narrative-like form and aim, not at expressing the newswriter's subjective opinion about hard facts, but rather at an accurate retelling of events usually recounted by the newspaper institutional voice. The events usually reported are those involving a story that is hot off the press, preferably entailing some sort of immediate conflict. Hard fact reports of accidents, crimes, discoveries, announcements, disasters, scandals, antagonisms, violence, cataclysms, wars, natural catastrophes, misfortune, calamities, political and social revolutions, among many others, which are usually time-bound to immediacy, generally fall within the genre of Hard News Report.

Hard News Reports consist of three main structural components, viz., the Headline, the Lead Paragraph, and the Core Text. Sequentially, the Headline foreruns the Lead Paragraph and this in turn is followed by the Core Text. This is the typical sequence in which the three components usually occur in the genre. Additionally, two other optional components may occur as part of the structure of Hard News Reports, namely, the Minor Headline and the Byline.

The first main structural component, the Headline, is responsible for the way an event is primarily framed and presented to newsreaders which can radically affect how the event is reasoned out (Bell, 1991, p. 43). The Headline distinguishes visually from the Lead Paragraph and from the Core Text because it is usually printed in large size and salient font. The Headline is a short, condensed and highly informative introduction which aims, in practical terms and for obvious reasons, at calling potential newsreaders' attention, not only to read the news story, but also to convince them to buy the newspaper. Moreover, the Headline also aims at summarizing the essence of the hard fact to be later developed along the body of the Core Text. The Minor Headline is an optional component which can either precede or follow the Headline. It is usually printed in a smaller font type than that of the Headline, but larger than that of the Core Text. The Minor Headline provides more information than the Headline, but does not introduce key details about the news story. So the opening components of Hard News Reports are as follows: (Minor Headline) + Headline + (Minor Headline), where the item in parenthesis is the optional one. In Sample Text 1, Appendix A, "Rainha promete novas ações" and "Sem-terra invadem área no Pontal" are examples of a Minor Headline and a Headline, respectively.

The Byline is another optional segment which may occur at the beginning or at the end of Hard News Reports and aims at identifying the main author(s) responsible for the news report. Optionally, it may also provide information about the place where the journalist was at the time of news gathering and/or about his/her position within the newspaper; whether he/she belongs to the newspaper staff or if he/she is a freelance, for instance. In Sample Text 1, the Byline consists of the name of the journalist responsible for the news text (Luiz Malavolta), the paper he is then working for (Agência Folha), and the place where he was gathering information to construct

the news story (Pontal do Paranapanema). In Sample Text 2, Appendix A, the Byline exhibits only the name of the journalist in charge of the text – Diana Jean Schemo.

The Lead Paragraph, also known as Lead or Intro (Bell, 1991, p. 250; White, 1997, p. 111), is always printed in the same type and font size of that of the Core Text. The main function of the Lead Paragraph is to bridge the gap between the Headline and the Core Text. According to Bell (1991, p. 149), the Lead Paragraph “(...) summarizes the central action and establishes the point of the story. (...) The lead is the device by which (...) audience can get the main point of a story from reading a single opening sentence, and on that basis decide whether to continue.” While summarizing the pivotal event, the Lead Paragraph also orients newsreaders towards the central point of the story yet to be developed in the body of the Core Text. Fairclough (1995b, p. 72) states that the Lead Paragraph provides newsreaders with the gist of the story. In both, Sample Text 1 and Sample Text 2 the Lead Paragraph consists of the very first paragraph.

According to van Dijk (1988, p. 53) “Headline precedes Lead, and together they precede the rest of the news item. Their structural function is also clear: Together they express the major topics of the text. That is, they function as an initial summary.” Seen thus, there exists a coherent flow in the development of the news story that starts in the Headline, passes through the Minor Headline, whenever this occurs, the Lead Paragraph, and ends up in the full account of the event in the body of the Core Text. The intermediate role played by the Lead Paragraph therefore is threefold. First, it expands the general subject-matter introduced by the Headline, then it provides further information with respect to what is about to come in that the Lead Paragraph connects the Headline to the Core Text, and finally it guides newsreaders towards the

more specific key theme(s) in the Hard News Report. Bell (1991, p. 171) states that the “Headline and the Lead pick up components from the Story itself.”

The Core Text, the third main component of the tripartite structure of Hard News Reports, unfolds and expands the main conflict of the news story. Due to its lengthy nature, the Core Text consists of a number of paragraphs which, besides connecting the events of the narrative, also aim at holding the intended newsreader’s attention from the beginning through to the end of the news story. To do so, the narrator, or newswriter, usually employs storytelling techniques, ranging from word choice – formal or colloquial vocabulary, for instance – to structural organization of the news events. Figure 2.1 succinctly schematises the top-down relationship between the generic structural components of Hard News Reports.

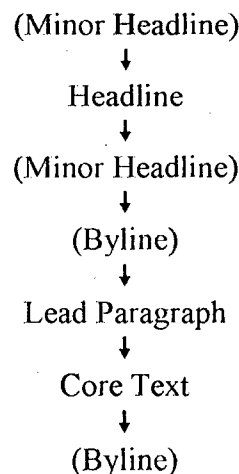


Fig. 2.1 - Main generic structural components of Hard News Reports

Sample Text 1 and Sample Text 2, in Appendix A, illustrate the way the Headline, the Lead Paragraph, the Core Text, and the optional components occur in Hard News Reports.

I do not further develop a deeper analysis of the structure of Hard News Reports because this would require a full-length research of its own and because there

already exist numerous studies about the structure of Hard News Reports, for instance, Bell (1991, 1996, 1999), Caldas-Coulthard (1997), Fairclough (1995b), van Dijk (1988), and White (1997), which expand the succinct account presented here. This account aims mainly at introducing the major structural features of Hard News Reports and setting the textual background where the news stories take place. Moreover, this research concerns essentially with the way news producers make use of language to create news stories and linguistically represent the Landless Movement in the Press.

2.2 Systemic Functional Linguistics: An Introduction

Traditionally, linguistic investigation has focused mainly on the way languages are structured at sentence level. The advances in the study of language in actual use, however, have required scholars to search for innovative and more realistic paradigms in order to explain the workings of such highly complex semiotic system and its dynamics which encompass socio-based features we are all exposed to in our everyday use of language. Even though, as will be seen later in this section, Systemic Functional Linguistics (SFL) focuses on the clause, it allows to study language at the level of discourse.

In order to account for the inherent social nature of language and in turn explicate the sociolinguistic phenomena at work in the corpus under investigation, I draw upon SFL, a current theoretical and analytical approach to language study whose main concern is centred on the examination of language as social practice. This linguistic approach to the study of language use focuses mainly on the indissociable relationship between language and its actual socio-cultural milieu. As such, it seems to provide a more down-to-earth theoretical rationale to be applied as a tool to

investigate the multifold sociolinguistic phenomena occurring in the ordinary employment of the language of Hard News Reports.

Deeply rooted in the functional notion of language, SFL is a linguistic theory that looks at how language both acts upon and is constrained by the social context. The concept of SFL was first introduced by J.R. Firth (1957)¹, and was later developed by his student M.A.K. Halliday. Unlike the structural approaches to language study which have traditionally focused attention on linguistic components and their syntagmatic combinations, SFL is a theory of language whose main concern is the notion of language as function. Within the Hallidayan approach, the semiotic function of language is to make meanings. Not only does SFL account for the syntactic structures of a given language, but it also turns its attention to the roles language plays within its social milieu. In order to account for the bi-directional relationship between language and social practices, it is necessary to have a set of linguistic devices which allows for both a structural and a social analysis of language.

Within the systemic-functional lexicogrammatical model, Halliday claims that language performs three general metafunctions which are simultaneous strands of meaning: (i) the Ideational – or Experiential – Function, (ii) the Interpersonal Function, and (iii) the Textual Function. Halliday (1973, pp. 105-107) defines the three functions as follows:

In the first place language serves for the expression of content: it has a representational, or as I would prefer to call it, an IDEATIONAL function. (...) [And] it is through this function that the speaker or writer embodies in language his experience of the phenomena of the real world; and this includes his experience of the internal world of his own consciousness: his reactions, cognitions and perceptions, and also his linguistic acts of speaking and understanding. (Halliday, 1973, pp. 105-106.)

In the second place, language serves what we may call an INTERPERSONAL function. (...) Here, the speaker [or writer] is using language as the means of his own intrusion into the speech event: the expression of his comments, his attitudes and evaluations, and also of the relationship that he sets up between himself and the listener [or reader] -- in particular, the communication role that he adopts, of informing, questioning, greeting, persuading and the like. (Halliday, 1973, p. 106.)

But there is a third function which is in turn instrumental to these two, whereby language is as it were enabled to meet the demands that are made on it; I shall call this the TEXTUAL function, since it is concerned with the creation of text. (...) It is through this function that language makes links with itself and with the situation; and discourse becomes possible, because the speaker or writer can produce a text and the listener or reader can recognize one. (Halliday, 1973, p. 107.)

The Ideational – or Experiential – Function (“A clause has meaning as a representation, a construal of some process in ongoing human experience”), the Interpersonal Function, (“A clause has meaning as an exchange, a transaction between speaker and listener [writer and reader] (...) the element the speaker [writer] makes responsible for the validity of what he is saying [writing]”), and the Textual Function (“A clause has meaning as a message, a quantum of information (...) the speaker [writer] selects for ‘grounding’ what he is going on to say [write]”) (Halliday 1994, p. 34) are associated with specific lexicogrammatical systems through which they are accomplished. The Ideational – or Experiential – meaning is described through the System of Transitivity “(...) which construes the world of experience into a manageable set of PROCESS TYPES” (Halliday, 1994, p. 106), the Interpersonal meaning is expressed through the System of Mood, a system which construes the clause as exchange (Halliday, 1994, p. 68), and the Textual meaning is described through the System of Theme, which “(...) gives the clause its character as a message” (Halliday, 1994, p. 37) and therefore creates relevance to the context. Only the

Ideational – or Experiential – and the Textual meanings are employed in the analysis of the corpus.

On the other hand, SFL also advocates that all language use is motivated by social requirements and that it is functional in as much as it fulfils those requirements. According to Eggins (1994, p. 2) “The systemic approach to language is functional in two main respects, (...) systemicists ask **how do people use language?** [and] **how is language structured for use?**” So, in order to answer these questions it is essential that real life interactions be observed and how interactants make meanings through those interactions in authentic contexts.

In other words, the theory accounts for both the linguistic choices individuals make when they interact in real life exchanges, both spoken and written, as well as for the way language functions in the act of communication itself, i.e., what language does within the social context and how language does it are the fundamental assumptions behind this linguistic theory. In this way, SFL has a much wider scope than any other linguistic theory so far proposed. As such, SFL theory allows grammar to have a pivotal role in the investigation of discourse, a part impossible to be played by the traditional prescriptive frameworks. According to Halliday (1994, pp. xvi-xvii),

The current preoccupation is with discourse analysis, or ‘text linguistics’; and it is sometimes assumed that this can be carried on without grammar – or even that it is somehow an alternative to grammar. But this is an illusion. *A discourse analysis that is not based on grammar is not an analysis at all, but simply a running commentary on a text:* either an appeal has to be made to some set of non-linguistic conventions, or to some linguistic features that are trivial enough to be accessible without a grammar, like the number of words per sentence (and even the objectivity of these is often illusory); or else the exercise remains a private one in which one explanation is as good or as bad as another. [emphasis added]

The functional grammar proposed by Halliday (1994) draws on the systemic networks but places emphasis on the functional relationships between the lexicogrammatical system and its social environment. "The social structure", Halliday (1978, p. 114) claims, "is not just an ornamental background to linguistic interpretation, as it has tended to become in sociolinguistic discussions. It is an essential element in the evolution of semantic systems and semantic processes." Language, therefore, is seen as an instrument of social interaction rather than a linguistic system viewed in isolation. According to Halliday (1994, pp. xiii-xiv), his theory of grammar is functional "(1 (...) in the sense that it is designed to account for how language is **used**. (...) (2) Following from this, the fundamental components of **meaning** in language are functional components. (...) [and] (3 (...) each **element** in a language is explained by reference to its function in the total linguistic system."

Halliday anchors his functional rationale on the analysis of the clause. In his theory, the clause is the basic unit of communication based around a verb which is made up by the process itself (the verb), participants in the process, and circumstances associated with the process (Halliday, 1994, p. 107). Within the semiotic resource system, the clause provides the means to realize the ideational, interpersonal, and textual semiotic functions. Along these lines, Stubbs (1983, p. 81) states that discourse is "(...) language above the sentence or above the clause." Figure 2.2 illustrates the rank of the clause, one of the building blocks of discourse, in relation to other linguistic units.

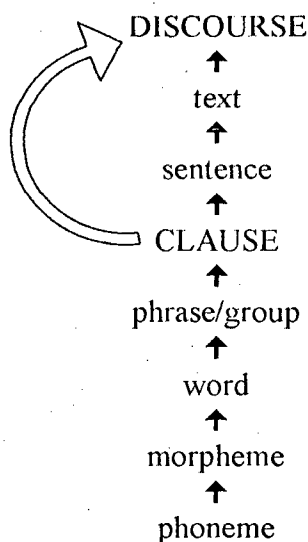


Fig. 2.2 - Position of the clause within an eight-rank hierarchy model

The clause is the starting point for the explanation of the functional linguistic mechanisms at work in the higher levels of the scale, especially at the level of discourse. Brown and Yule (1983, p. 1) state that “(...) the analysis of discourse is, necessarily, the analysis of language in use. As such, it cannot be restricted to the description of linguistic forms independent of the purposes or functions which these forms are designed to serve in human affairs.” The clause is, in fact, the raw material systemic analysts use to investigate the upper reaches of the scale, particularly the way people use language and how language is structured for actual use. The rapport established by the clause in relation to discourse allows for the investigation of how language mediates social practices and, in this specific case, represents the Landless Movement in Hard News Reports.

It is through the analysis of the clause constituents that it is possible to observe the process of news production and to unveil the linguistic mechanisms used by news producers without losing track of the overall functional facet of language. In this case,

each clausal element used in the construction of the news text should be considered individually. To do so, I find it useful and necessary to deconstruct² the news discourse to its smallest meaningful constituents, i.e., reduce the clause constituents to parts. According to Belsey (1988, p. 109) “(...) to deconstruct [a] text (...) is to open it, to release the possible positions of its intelligibility, including those which reveal the partiality (...) of the ideology inscribed in the text.” The aim of deconstructing a text is thus “(...) to examine the *process of its production* – (...) the mode of production, the materials and their arrangement in the work” (Belsey, 1988, p. 104).

Within the Hallidayan functional grammar, two systems, grounded on the clause as their fundamental element, are used as the theoretical and analytical framework for the investigation of the language of Hard News Reports, viz., the System of Transitivity and the System of Theme. Both systems are extensively elaborated and illustrated by Halliday (1994), but in deciding how much ground to cover, I have found that, although relevant for the analysis of the English language from the systemic-functional perspective, the finer details of his model and the delicate descriptions are not only difficult to operationalize, but also not fully applicable to the level of analysis this research aims at. So, what follows is a concise review of two of the main pillars of Halliday’s theory which are used here as tools to assist in the investigation of the way the MST is represented in the genre of Hard News Reports. They suffice to reveal that there is a lot more in grammar than ordinary language users can notice. In the following discussion the terminology used and the analytical approach applied can be originally found in Halliday (1994, System of Transitivity – pp. 107-175 and System of Theme – pp. 37-67).

2.3 The System of Transitivity

2.3.1 Foreword

Traditionally, the term transitivity has been mainly used to refer to two classes of verbs: (i) transitive verbs – verbs which require an object – and (ii) intransitive verbs – verbs which do not require an object nor can be used in the passive (Quirk, et. al., 1972, pp. 38-40, 343-344; Greenbaum and Quirk, 1990, pp. 204-206; Leech and Svartvik, 1975, pp. 185, 299-303; Sinclair, 1990a, pp. 137-145). The same application of this concept of transitivity can also be found in the Brazilian Portuguese grammar (Bechara, 1988, pp. 204-205; Paschoalin & Spadoto, 1989, pp. 172-173; Neto & Infante, 1999, pp. 513-525; Terra, 1999, pp. 212-213). This restricted notion does not account for the socio-oriented nature of language and serves only the study of language concerned with syntagmatic relationships between linguistic elements usually at sentence level. Unlike the traditional prescriptive notion, Halliday (1994) expands the concept of transitivity to comprise social aspects of language use and to explain who does what to whom in which circumstances.

The System of Transitivity, as seen in Halliday's functional grammar, is part of the Ideational – or Experiential – function of language and is basically made up of three main components: "(i) the process itself; (ii) participants in the process; [and] (iii) circumstances associated with the process." These are typically realized by a verbal group, a nominal group, and an adverbial group or a prepositional phrase, respectively (Halliday, 1994, pp. 106-109). Figure 2.3 depicts the components of the System of Transitivity and the means through which they are realized.

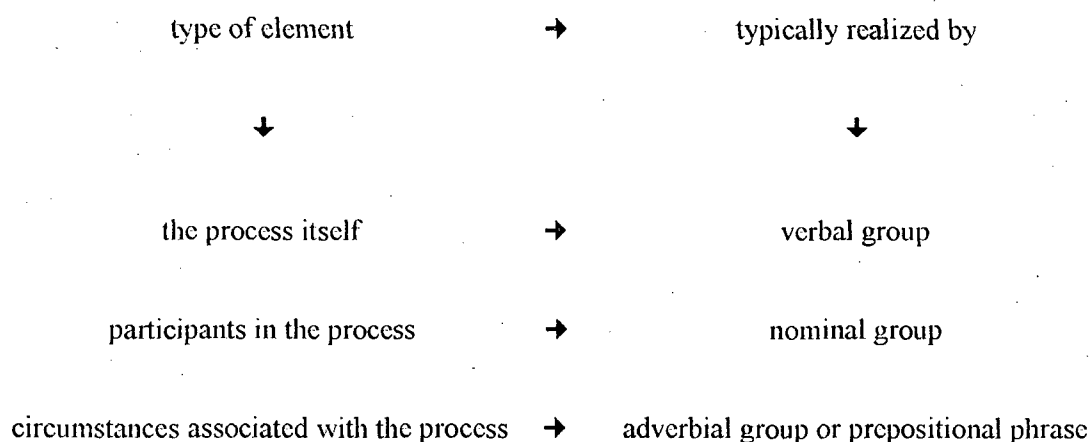


Fig. 2.3 - The System of Transitivity basic framework.
Adapted from Halliday, 1994, pp. 107-109.

Halliday (1994) views the concept of Transitivity from a much broader perspective than the traditional one. For him, Transitivity is a grammatical system whose scope encompasses the clause as a whole and not only the issue concerning whether a verb requires an object to follow it, or not. In this respect, Halliday (1994, p. 106) states that Transitivity accounts for “(...) the clause in its experiential function, its guise as a way of representing patterns of experience.” In other words, the clause is seen as a means to represent reality. The representation of reality in turn is realized by a set of process types which constitute the nucleus of the concept of Transitivity. The three main processes are: Material (physical world), Mental (world of consciousness), and Relational (world of abstract relations). These processes are, according to Halliday (1994, p. 138), “(...) the cornerstones of the grammar in its guise as a theory of experience [which] account for the majority of all clauses in a text (...)”.

The examples following 2.3.2-2.3.7, taken from Sample Text 1 and Sample Text 2, in Appendix A, are used only for illustrative purposes to exemplify the process types. The analysis of the *Folha de S. Paulo* and *The Guardian/The Observer*

corpus proper is carried out later in 2.5. Note that whenever adjustments are required in order for the clausal investigation to become manageable and in turn easily understandable, I leave out unnecessary structural items, as in Example 2.1 [Text 2 - Paragraph 1]. When structural items are necessary to be inserted in the clause, as in Example 2.6 [Text 1 - Paragraph 11], they appear in square brackets. This systematic is employed both to illustrate the theoretical framework – the System of Transitivity and the System of Theme – and also in the analysis of the corpus proper.

2.3.2 Material Process

According to Halliday (1994, pp. 110-111) “Material processes are processes of ‘doing’. They express the notion that some entity ‘does’ something – which may be done ‘to’ some other entity. (...) Material processes are not necessarily concrete, physical events; they may be abstract doings and happenings (...)” They are processes involving doing (to) or acting, creating or changing, and happening or being created. Two participants are directly involved in the development of Material processes – the Actor, the obligatory participant which carries out the doing, and the Goal, the optional participant to which the doing is extended or directed. Example 2.1 illustrates the relationship between the Actor, the Material process, and the Goal.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 1]

Cerca de 700 sem-terra	invadiram	na madrugada de ontem	a fazenda Rancho Grande
Actor	Material	Circumstance	Goal

[Text 2 - Paragraph 1]

The police	killed	19 people
Actor	Material	Goal

Example 2.1 - Actor, Material Process, Goal, and Circumstance related

2.3.3 Mental Process

Mental processes, on the other hand, are processes of sensing (seeing, feeling, thinking), which involve perceptual, affectionate, and cognitive activities (Halliday, 1994, pp. 112-119). The participants in the Mental processes are the Senser, the one who sees, feels or thinks, and the Phenomenon, what is seen, felt or thought. Although both participants are potentially involved in any Mental process, in certain clauses a Senser, but no Phenomenon might occur and in others a Phenomenon, but no Senser is the explicit participant. The relationship between the Senser, the Mental process, and the Phenomenon is illustrated in Example 2.2.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 4]

Nós	queremos	que o governo faça uma vistoria na propriedade
Senser	Mental	Phenomenon

[Text 2 - Paragraph 15]

Few people	expect	that the deaths will alter the collision course
Senser	Mental	Phenomenon

Example 2.2 - Senser, Mental Process, and Phenomenon related

2.3.4 Relational Process

Relational processes, i.e., processes of being (having attribute, having identity, symbolizing), establish a relationship between two entities. There are three main types of Relational processes – “(1) intensive ‘*x* is *a*’, (2) circumstantial ‘*x* is at *a*’ (where ‘is at’ stands for ‘is at, in, on, for, with, about, along, etc.’), [and] (3) possessive ‘*x* has *a*’.” Each of these types are further sub-divided into two modes – “(a) attributive ‘*a* is an attribute of *x*’ [and] (b) identifying ‘*a* is the identity of *x*’” (Halliday, 1994, p. 119). The participants in the Relational processes are described according to the interrelationships between the types and modes mentioned above. In the Relational

intensive process – attributive mode – the participants are the Carrier, the entity to which some quality is ascribed or attributed, and the Attribute, the quality ascribed or attributed. In the Relational intensive process – identifying mode – one entity is used to identify the other. So, the participants are the Identified, the entity which has an identity assigned to it, i.e., the participant that is ascertained an identity, and the Identifier, the element used to identify. In the Relational circumstantial process – attributive mode – the Carrier is the participant to which is ascribed some Attribute by the Circumstance. In the Relational circumstantial process – identifying mode – the participants, the Identified and the Identifier, are related by means of a feature of time or place or manner, etc. In the Relational possessive process – attributive and identifying modes – the participants are the same, the Possessor and the Possessed, and the relationship is basically that of possession, i.e., one entity possesses the other (Halliday, 1994, pp. 119-138). For the purpose of this research, however, I make use of the attributive and the identifying modes and their respective participants – Carrier-Attribute and Identified-Identifier. Examples 2.3-2.5 illustrate the attributive and the identifying modes.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 4]

A terra	é	improdutiva
Carrier	Relational	Attribute

[Text 2 - Paragraph 5]

That figure	is	exaggerated
Carrier	Relational	Attribute

Example 2.3 - Carrier, Relational Process, and Attribute related

[Text 1 - Paragraph 3]

Marcelo Negrão	é	um dos principais articuladores da UDR
Identified	Relational	Identifier

[Text 2 - Paragraph 2]

The clash	was	one of the most violent
Identified	Relational	Identifier

Example 2.4 – Identified, Relational Process, and Identifier related

[Text 1 - Paragraph 3]

Negão	tem	20 seguranças armados
Carrier	Relational	Attribute

[Text 2 - Paragraph 5]

Brazil	has	one of the most uneven land distributions in the world
Carrier	Relational	Attribute

Example 2.5 – Carrier (Possessor), Relational Process, and Attribute (Possessed) related

In between these primary processes lie three secondary types of processes – Behavioural (behaving), Verbal (saying), and Existential (existing). These processes are on the borderlines of Material, Mental, and Relational processes. The boundaries between Material, Mental, and Relational processes and Behavioural, Verbal, and Existential processes are not clear-cut, but blurred, as represented by the merging colours (Halliday, 1994, p. 107), since Behavioural processes share characteristics of Material and Mental processes, Verbal processes share characteristics of Mental and Relational processes, and Existential processes share characteristics of Relational and Material processes. Figure 2.4 diagrammatically depicts Halliday’s paradigm through the concrete visual metaphoric relationship between the processes (Halliday, 1994, front cover and p. 108).

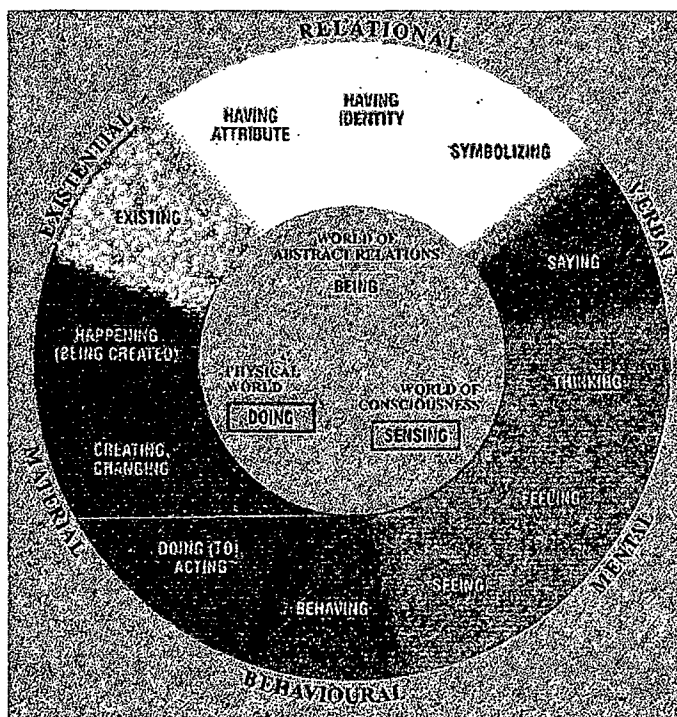


Fig. 2.4 - Process types in English, after Halliday, 1994, front cover and p. 108

2.3.5 Behavioural Process

According to Halliday (1994, p. 139), Behavioural processes “(...) are processes of (typically human) physiological and psychological behaviour, (...). They are the least distinct of all the six process types because they have no clearly defined characteristics of their own; (...) they are partly like the material and partly like the mental. (...)” The participant in this process is the Behaver, i.e., the entity that behaves. In other words, the clause is usually constituted by the Behaver and the process itself. The Behaviour, a restatement of the process, and the Matter, which indicates the circumstance, can also occur in some clauses. The Behavioural process is illustrated by Example 2.6.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 11]		
[Vocês]	[tomem] cuidado,	a cem metros pistoleiros da UDR
Behaver	Behavioural	Matter
[Text 2 - Paragraph 8]		
[Brazilians]	[watched]	[the killings on national television]
Behaver	Behavioural	Matter

Example 2.6 - Behaver, Behavioural Process, Behaviour, and Matter related

2.3.6 Verbal Process

As to Verbal processes, Halliday (1994, p. 140) states that they “(...) are processes of saying (...)” and that the broader notion of saying “(...) covers any kind of symbolic exchange of meaning (...)”. Altogether there are four participants in this process – the Sayer, the entity that says; the Receiver, the entity to whom what is said is addressed; the Verbiage, the message itself; and the Target, the entity at whom what is said is aimed (Halliday, 1994, p. 141). Example 2.7 illustrates the Verbal process.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 11]

As placas	"avisam"	aos motoristas	a existência de "pistoleiros da UDR"
Sayer	Verbal	Receiver	Verbiage

[Text 2 - Paragraph 11]

President Fernando Henrique Cardoso	criticized	the police "incompetence"
Sayer	Verbal	Target

Example 2.7 - Sayer, Verbal Process, Receiver, Verbiage, and Target related

2.3.7 Existential Process

Existential processes, according to Halliday, "(...) represent that something exists or happens (...)". The word 'there' in Existential clauses plays the role of the Actor and is typically followed by the verb 'be'. The only participant in this process is named Existent. In other words, Existential clauses are constituted by the Existent, the "(...) object or event which is being said to exist (...)". (Halliday, 1994, p. 142) and the process itself. The Existential process is illustrated in Example 2.8.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 11]

A cem metros	[há]	pistoleiros da UDR
Circumstance	Existential	Existent

[Text 2 - Paragraph 10]

There	were	signs
	Existential	Existent

Example 2.8 - Existential Process and Existent related

The System of Transitivity is pivotal to investigate the representation of the Landless Movement in Hard News Reports because it enables the analyst to look into the ways individuals are involved in social practices. In other words, it places emphasis on the relationship between agents, patients, beneficiaries, etc. as social actors in relation to the processes participants carry out. Figure 2.5 depicts the relationship between the process types, their meanings, and key participants.

Processes	Meanings	Participants	Circumstances
Material physical world	(doing) doing (to), acting, creating, changing, happening (being created)	Actor / Goal	adverbial group prepositional phrase
Mental world of consciousness	(sensing) perception - seeing, affection - feeling, cognition - thinking	Senser / Phenomcnon	adverbial group prepositional phrase
Relational world of abstract relations	(being) having attribute - attributing, having identity - identifying, symbolizing	Carrier / Attribute Identified / Identifier	adverbial group prepositional phrase
Behavioural	(behaving)	Behaver / Behaviour	adverbial group prepositional phrase
Verbal	(saying)	Sayer / Receiver / Verbiage / Target	adverbial group prepositional phrase
Existential	(existing)	Existent	adverbial group prepositional phrase

Fig. 2.5 - Process types, their meanings, and key participants
Adapted from Halliday, 1994, p. 143.

The System of Transitivity, as observed earlier, is employed here as a theoretical and analytical tool to investigate the representation of the MST in the Press. The process itself and the participant(s) in the process are the pivotal clausal components I am mainly concerned with for the purpose of the research, but I do not limit the analysis of the corpus to these two components. Even though I do not make, for instance, the Circumstance one of the central elements in the research, I find it necessary, for the sake of didactics and convenience, to provide a superficial analysis of those components immediately orbiting around the central clausal components. This is done so in order to provide a more consistent mapping of each clause and avoid an analysis centered exclusively in spotting the process and the participant(s). I

disregard finer scrutiny of clausal components such as Range, Matter, Beneficiary, among others, though they may occasionally appear. In the case of Circumstance, for example, I am not concerned whether hypotactic clauses should or should not be systematically analysed throughout. Rather, I consistently concentrate on the processes and the participants as shown in Figure 2.5.

2.4 The System of Theme

2.4.1 Foreword

The System of Theme, which is part of the Textual function of language, allows text producers to foreground and highlight certain clausal components by choosing which component should receive textual prominence and set the purpose of each component by means of establishing a relationship between the components in the clause structure. This textual feature is operationalized by means of two aspects, viz., position and function. In other words, while constructing a news text, the news producer makes choices concerning the position of linguistic items within the structure of the clause and simultaneously sets the objective each item should aim at in the unfolding of news discourse. It is therefore through the arrangement of linguistic items that news producers create a co-text and a context to serve the intents of the news story, and of all those behind it, and meet newsreaders' requirements by providing the expected, and/or unexpected, pieces of information.

Within the thematic system, the item which occurs in the first position in the clause is the one which receives textual prominence and functions as the launch pad of the message, i.e., it sets up the context of the clause. In turn, the context points towards the direction the text is to take. That is, the item in the first position in the

clause 'sets the music' and imposes that the rest of the clause develop the issue it introduces. This textual network of clause components, their position and function, is the basis of the thematic system briefly discussed below.

The examples following 2.4.2-2.4.5, taken from Sample Text 1 and Sample Text 2, in Appendix A, are used only for illustrative purposes to exemplify the basic workings of the thematic and information structures. The corpus analysis of the *Folha de S. Paulo* and *The Guardian/The Observer* corpus proper is carried out later in 2.5.2.

2.4.2 Theme + Rheme: The System

The System of Theme consists of two main components – the Theme and the Rheme. Halliday (1994, p. 37) defines this system by stating that

The Theme is the element which serves as the point of departure of the message; it is that with which the clause is concerned. The remainder of the message, the part in which the Theme is developed, is called in the Prague School terminology the Rheme. As a message structure, therefore, a clause consists of a Theme accompanied by a Rheme; and the structure is expressed by the order – whatever is chosen as the Theme is put first.

The message is then structured as (Theme) + Rheme, always in that sequence. The parentheses indicate that the Theme is the optional component in the system when, for example, ellipsis is used. The Theme, therefore, encompasses both first position and point of departure of the clause as message. The Theme pairs with the Rheme, whose function is to unfold the message, and they are identified according to their location and function in the network of relationship they enter into. The Rheme reveals and/or informs something about the Theme. From this perspective, textual meaning is created through the system of Theme which "(...) gives the clause its

character as a message (Halliday, 1994, p. 37)” and, in so doing, establishes the constituency and the relevance of the context in which the thematic constituent is in direct relation with the rhematic constituent. Example 2.9 illustrates the Theme + Rheme typical structure.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 8]

Rainha	afirmou que dois ônibus com 120 sem-terra rumaram para São Paulo
Theme	Rheme

[Text 2 - Paragraph 7]

Some	have hired private armies to defend their claims
Theme	Rheme

Example 2.9 - Theme-Rheme structure

2.4.3 Types of Themes

The Theme is typically realized by a Nominal Group, an Adverbial Group or a Prepositional Phrase. Examples 2.10-2.12 contextualize the Theme structural realizations.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 5]

O dono da fazenda Rancho Grande, Otávio Eduardo Ferreira,	também não foi encontrado
Theme	Rheme

[Text 2 - Paragraph 3]

The most recent clash	took place in the state of Para on Wednesday
Theme	Rheme

Example 2.10 - Nominal Group as Theme

[Text 1 - Paragraph 6]

Hoje	os sem-terra vão reiniciar o bloqueio das agências do Banco do Brasil no Pontal
Theme	Rheme

[Text 2 - Paragraph 11]

[Strongly]	President Fernando Henrique Cardoso criticized the police “incompetence”
Theme	Rheme

Example 2.11 - Adverbial Group as Theme

[Text 1 - Paragraph 3]

Segundo [de acordo com] Rainha	a próxima fazenda a ser invadida será a Santa Rita
Theme	Rheme

[Text 2 - Paragraph 10]

At local hospitals,	doctors said there were signs some of the homesteaders were executed
Theme	Rheme

Example 2.12 - Prepositional Phrase as Theme

The Theme can be of three types – textual, interpersonal, and experiential (or topical) Theme. When they co-occur, it is in this sequence they usually appear. The topical Theme is the obligatory constituent and, being the one which comes last when it co-occurs with textual and/or interpersonal Theme(s), sets the boundary between the Theme and the Rheme. Whenever at least two of these constituents occur simultaneously, the system is said to have a multiple Theme; otherwise, it is considered to have a simple Theme. (see Halliday, 1994, pp. 37-67 and Eggins, 1994, pp. 275-284 for a full account of the issue).

2.4.4 Markedness: Marked and Unmarked Theme

Depending on the choice made, the Theme can be unmarked or marked. “In a declarative clause” according to Halliday (1994, p. 43), “the typical pattern is one in which Theme is conflated with Subject. (...) We shall refer to the mapping of Theme on to Subject as UNMARKED THEME.” On the other hand, “A Theme that is something other than the Subject, in a declarative clause, we shall refer to as a MARKED THEME.” Halliday (1994, p. 44). Although this is the most straightforward distinction between unmarked and marked Theme, Halliday (1994, pp. 45-67) and Eggins (1994, pp. 295-298) discuss the thematic network in more detail. But for the current study, it is also worth noting that when the Theme conflates with the Subject, Finite, Predicator, or WH-element, it is said to be UNMARKED because these are the most usual and typical

patterns. When the Theme conflates with any other component of the clause other than the ones mentioned above, it is said to be MARKED because of the unusual and atypical structure. The Theme is MARKED when it conflates with an Adjunct (Adverbial Group or Prepositional Phrase) or with a Complement (Nominal Group or Nominalization). Examples 2.13-2.16 are instances of UNMARKED Themes and Examples 2.17-2.20 are instances of MARKED Themes.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 8]

Rainha	afirmou que dois ônibus com 120 sem-terra rumaram para São Paulo
Theme/Subject	Rheme

[Text 2 - Paragraph 9]

The tapes	contradicted accounts by the police that demonstrators had shot first
Theme/Subject	Rheme

[Text 1 - Paragraph 10]

O MST	afixou cerca de dez placas confeccionadas com tinta fosforescente
Theme/Subject	Rheme

[Text 2 - Paragraph 1]

The police	opened fire
Theme/Subject	Rheme

Example 2.13 - Theme + Rheme system in unmarked relationship. Theme conflates with Subject.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 8]

Devem fazer	o bloqueio de uma agência do IB
Theme/Finite	Rheme

[Text 2 - Paragraph 4]

[Did	the attack resemble a predawn raid against the squatters?]
Theme/Finite	Rheme

Example 2.14 - Theme + Rheme system in unmarked relationship. Theme conflates with Finite.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 11]

“Cuidado,	a cem metros pistoleiros da UDR.”
Theme/Predicator	Rheme

[Text 2 - Paragraph 8]

“Shame”	read Friday’s banner headline in the Jornal do Brasil
Theme/Predicator	Rheme

Example 2.15 - Theme + Rheme system in unmarked relationship. Theme conflates with Predicator.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 1]

[O que	fizeram os sem-terra na madrugada de ontem?]
Theme/WH-element	Rheme

[Text 2 - Paragraph 13]

[When	did he pledge to speed up two bills?]
Theme/WH-element	Rheme

Example 2.16 - Theme + Rheme system in unmarked relationship. Theme conflates with WH-element.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 1]

[Surpreendentemente,	cerca de 700 sem-terra invadiram na madrugada de ontem a Fazenda Rancho Grande
Theme/Adjunct	Rheme

[Text 2 - Paragraph 11]

[Strongly]	President Fernando Henrique Cardoso criticized the police "incompetence"
Theme/Adjunct	Rheme

Example 2.17 - Theme + Rheme system in marked relationship. Theme conflates with Adjunct (Adverbial Group).

[Text 1 - Paragraph 3]

Segundo [de acordo com] Rainha	a próxima fazenda a ser invadida será a Santa Rita
Theme/Adjunct	Rheme

[Text 2 - Paragraph 11]

At local hospitals,	doctors said there were signs some of the homesteaders were executed
Theme/Adjunct	Rheme

Example 2.18 - Theme + Rheme system in marked relationship. Theme conflates with Adjunct (Prepositional Phrase).

[Text 1 - Paragraph 2]

[Operação eleitoral,	assim o MST está chamando a invasão]
Theme/Complement	Rheme

[Text 2 - Paragraph 14]

A step,	Diolinda Alves Silva (...) ruled out Friday
Theme/Complement	Rheme

Example 2.19 - Theme + Rheme system in marked relationship. Theme conflates with Complement (Nominal Group).

[Text 1 - Paragraph 7]

[Em protesto contra o atraso na liberação de financiamento,	as agências foram bloqueadas por sem-terras]
Theme/Complement	Rheme

[Text 2 - Paragraph 1]

A confrontation (...) between families seeking land to farm and the police	ended in bloodshed this week
Theme/Complement	Rheme

Example 2.20 - Theme + Rheme system in marked relationship. Theme conflates with Complement (Nominalization).

Since news discourse is characteristically constituted by declarative clauses, the basic thematic features discussed above are likely to suffice for the analysis of the way the MST is represented in Hard News Reports. Theme markedness is relevant for the analysis of the *Folha de S. Paulo* and *The Guardian/The Observer* corpus because the choice of UNMARKED or MARKED Theme may shed some light on the way news producers construct news discourse and in turn may unveil the purpose of news producers when deciding what linguistic item should be emphasised in the clause. In relation to the most UNMARKED type of Theme, Halliday (1994, p. 43) states that “The Subject is the element that is chosen as Theme unless there is good reason for choosing something else.” Along these lines, the use of a Complement as the most MARKED type of Theme explicitly foregrounds a reason for such a choice.

2.4.5 Theme + Rheme and Given + New Related

Within the realm of the clause in its guise as a message, the System of Theme (Theme + Rheme), there exists another system, besides the markedness of Theme choice, which contributes a great deal to the message interpretation – the system of information structure – (Given) + New. The parentheses indicate that the Given is the optional component in the system when, for example, ellipsis is used.

Theme and Rheme are like Given and New as far as their UNMARKED positions in the clause are concerned. Matthiessen and Halliday (1997, pp. 22-23) pertinently state that

In the unmarked case, a clause is co-extensive with an information unit, so that Theme + Rheme and Given + New complement one another within the domain of a single clause. (...) Consequently, the unmarked message is a combination of two textual waves: Theme shading into Rheme and Given shading into New, with Theme falling within Given and New falling within Rheme. (...).

Theme and Given refer to established information and Rheme and New refer to fresh information. Likewise, they are both concerned with the whole functional nature of the whole clause rather than words and/or phrases. Examples 2.21-2.23 illustrate the basic relationship between the thematic and the information structures.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 6]

O MST	anunciou que os sem-terra vão reiniciar o bloqueio das agências do Banco do Brasil
Theme	Rheme
Given	New

[Text 2 - Paragraph 14]

He	appealed to the leaders of the land reform movement to drop their strategy
Theme	Rheme
Given	New

Example 2.21 - Theme + Rheme and Given + New systems related

[Text 1 - Paragraph 10]

O MST	afixou cerca de 10 placas confeccionadas com tinta fosforescente
Theme	Rheme
Given	New

[Text 2 - Paragraph 9]

The film	showed police officers firing machine guns into the air
Theme	Rheme
Given	New

Example 2.22 - Theme + Rheme and Given + New systems in unmarked relationship

[Text 1 - Paragraph 5]

O dono da fazenda Rancho Grande, Otávio Eduardo Ferreira,	também não foi encontrado
Theme	Rheme
Given	New

[Text 2 - Paragraph 13]

On Friday,	he also pledged to speed up two bills
Theme	Rheme
Given	New

Example 2.23 - Theme + Rheme and Given + New systems in marked relationship

Judging from the examples above, it is also possible to add to this discussion that whereas the Theme is the part of the clause which establishes the issue of the clause and the Rheme the part which elaborates on the issue established by the

Theme, the Given is the part which retrieves the previously known information which is to be later elaborated by the New. In other words, information that focuses on that what the clause is about is labelled as Given while information which gives detail(s) about and relates to that in the Given is labelled as New.

The actual meaning of Given and New, in relation to the placement of information in the structure of the clause, is, according to Halliday (1994, p. 298),

(...) information that is presented by the speaker [or writer] as recoverable (Given) or not recoverable (New) to the listener [or reader]. What is treated as recoverable may be so because it has been mentioned before; but that is not the only possibility. It may be something that is in the situation, like *I* and *you*; or in the air, so to speak; or something that is not around at all but that the speaker wants to present as Given for rhetorical purposes. The meaning is: this is not news. Likewise, what is treated as non-recoverable may be something that has not been mentioned; but it may be something unexpected, whether previously mentioned or not. The meaning is: attend to this; this is news.

The relationship between the thematic structure and the information structure does not always occur in that order, however. (Theme) + Rheme has a fixed pattern whereas (Given) + New has a flexible one.

In spite of the close relationship between the systems of Theme + Rheme (thematic structure) and Given + New (information structure), there exists a crucial issue which turns them into two independent systems. Halliday (1994, p. 299) conveniently provides a clear explanation by stating that

The Theme is what I, the speaker [or writer], choose to take as my point of departure. The Given is what you, the listener [or reader], already know about or have accessible to you. Theme + Rheme is speaker-oriented [or writer-oriented], while Given + New is listener-oriented [or reader-oriented].

It is, therefore, the speaker, or writer, who decides whether to structure the message within an UNMARKED or a MARKED Theme pattern. The choice is based not

only on the context of situation, but also on the speaker's, or writer's, intents in structuring the discourse following one of the patterns.

As far as the present research is concerned, the brief discussion on thematic structure – Theme + Rheme – and information structure – Given + New – suffices for the investigation of the representation of the Landless Movement in *Folha de S. Paulo* and *The Guardian/The Observer*. The clause constituents which do not have a Transitivity function are not labelled and thus are left unanalysed. Whenever applicable, they are taken into account as a component of the Theme system, otherwise it is the subsequent component which is considered for the thematic analysis. Thus, I focus mainly on the way thematic structure, particularly topical Theme and markedness, and information structure operate to represent the Landless Movement in print news discourse.

The System of Theme, which is part of the Textual Function and which accounts for the ways the clause is organized to express textual meanings (clause as message) together with the System of Transitivity, which is part of the Ideational – or Experiential – Function and which accounts for the ways the clause is organized to express experiential meanings (clause as representation) are used here as analytical tools for the examination of the way language is utilized in the production of news, in this particular case, the way events are turned into print news and (re)presented to readership via news discourse.

The concise exposition of the systems of Transitivity and Theme and their application to the two sample texts aim at introducing the rationale behind Systemic Functional Linguistics and at illustrating its working mechanisms while they are applied to the investigation of the way news discourse represents the Landless Movement in the Press. There are other relevant systems within the Hallidayan

systemic functional network (see Halliday, 1994, *passim*), but the ones briefly discussed above suffices for the analysis of the corpus and examination of the data, and serves the intended objectives of the current research – the breakdown of the linguistic mechanisms used by news producers of Hard News Reports about the MST.

2.5 Analysis of the Corpus: *Folha de S. Paulo* and *The Guardian/The Observer*

Before I analyse the corpus on linguistic grounds, it is enlightening to take a look at some meaningful numerical features³ (cf. Table 2.1). The length of the Hard News Reports about the Landless Movement in *Folha de S. Paulo* – 6.088 words – and in *The Guardian/The Observer* – 7.271 words – reveals that there are 1.183 more words in the 1999-2000 *The Guardian/The Observer* corpus than in the 1999-2000 *Folha de S. Paulo* corpus which allows for an increase of 119 clauses in the former. In other words, in *The Guardian/The Observer* the amount of information on the Brazilian agrarian reform exceeds that in *Folha de S. Paulo*.

In a way, these numbers provide concrete evidence that the textual length of the Hard News Reports, which differs in each newspaper, also amounts to the quantity, and perhaps the quality, of information provided through their respective news stories. Numerically speaking, the additional room allotted for reporting the problems involving the Landless Movement is an indication that *The Guardian/The Observer* is likely to take a wider view of the issue and thus treat it in greater detail. However, it is only through an accurate investigation into the lexicogrammatical structures of the corpus that hidden aspects of sociolinguistic nature can be brought to light (cf. the further discussion in 2.5.1 and 2.5.2).

Newspapers → Corpus Features ↓	<i>Folha de S. Paulo</i> 1999-2000	<i>The Guardian / The Observer</i> 1999-2000	Totals
Number of HNR →	12	12	24
Number of Clauses →	418	537	955
Number of Words →	6.088	7.271	13.359

Table 2.1 - General Features of *Folha de S. Paulo* and *The Guardian/The Observer*

The figures of the occurrences of Material, Mental, Relational, Behavioural, Verbal, and Existential processes in the corpus (cf. Table 2.2) also reveal some features of the Hard News Reports. Characteristically, Hard News Reports have a narrative-like structure and aim mainly at an objective and accurate retelling of hard events by means of factual accounts reported via news stories (see 2.1.2). As such, they recount facts through a textual structure which typically describes who does what to whom in what circumstances. Both in *Folha de S. Paulo* and *The Guardian/The Observer* the most recurrent are the Material processes (464 occurrences – 48,59%), an evidence that the news stories are predominantly action-based, participants are involved in doing and/or acting, and facts and events happen. Relational processes take the second place (240 occurrences – 25,13%) as a natural consequence of the kind of news stories being reported – land dispute between landed and landless. Since antagonisms, conflicts, socio-political issues, among others, are underlying elements in Hard News Reports (see 2.1.2), it is then implied that there exists a high incidence

Newspapers → Processes ↓	<i>Folha de S. Paulo</i> 1999-2000	<i>The Guardian / The Observer</i> 1999-2000	Totals ↓
Material →	212	252	464
Mental →	11	21	32
Relational →	99	141	240
Behavioural →	00	02	02
Verbal →	83	112	195
Existential →	13	09	22
Totals →	418	537	955

Table 2.2 - An outline of the occurrences of Material, Mental, Relational, Behavioural, Verbal, and Existential processes in *Folha de S. Paulo* and *The Guardian/The Observer*

of participants engaged in some kind of relationship, in this case the hostile clashing of opposed principles advocated by the Brazilian Government and the Landless Movement as far as agrarian reform is concerned. This in turn leads to Verbal processes, the third most recurrent processes (195 occurrences – 20,42%) in the corpus, an indication that the voices of the participants are heard, or at least reported. And one of the devices used by news producers is to quote actual words from participants as a way to give voice to the parties involved in the issue and in turn add authenticity and credibility to the news stories (see Chapter III, 3.4.4 and 3.5.4). The Material, Relational, and Verbal processes comprise the majority of the clausal

realizations (899 occurrences – 94,13%) and thus constitute the main Transitivity pattern in the corpus chosen to represent the Landless Movement. Figure 2.6 summarizes the occurrences of the process types in the corpus.

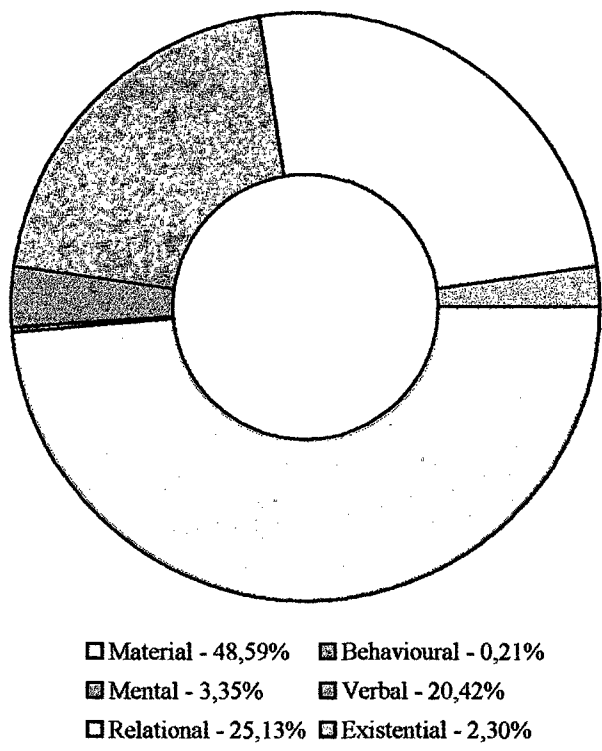


Fig. 2.6 - Overall occurrences of process types in the corpus

Thus, the Material, Relational, and Verbal processes are treated as the focal objects of investigation in this research.⁴ In a nutshell, *Folha de S. Paulo* and *The Guardian/The Observer* depict the question of land distribution in Brazil not only by simply reporting what happens and why, but also by highlighting the attitudes and the roles participants play while doing and/or acting in the course of the development of the news stories. The three other processes, Mental (32 occurrences – 3,35%), Existential (22 occurrences – 2,30%), and Behavioural (02 occurrences – 0,21%), rank in the fourth, fifth, and sixth places, respectively, and together appear in only 56

clausal occurrences (5,87%) in the corpus. They are then disregarded in favour of the more recurrent and substantial processes already mentioned above.

2.5.1 Representing the Facts: Transitivity

A total of 955 clauses are examined and the results from the application of the Transitivity system to the corpus reveal some relevant facts about the representation of the MST in the Press, particularly as far as the Landless Movement and the Brazilian Government are concerned. The numerical results from the application of the Transitivity system to the 1999-2000 *Folha de S. Paulo* and *The Guardian/The Observer* corpus and the counting of the process types are quantitatively displayed in Table 2.3. The Transitivity analysis is shown in detail in Appendix E. From now on, the examples used to illustrate and support the subsequent analyses and discussions are all taken from the 1999-2000 *Folha de S. Paulo* and *The Guardian/The Observer* corpus.

The most remarkable feature in Table 2.3 is that of all 955 clauses in the corpus, 756 (79,16%) processes (almost 80% of all processes together) concern the Landless Movement whereas 199 (20,84%) occurrences relate to the Brazilian Government. In other words, the numbers reveal that both *Folha de S. Paulo* and *The Guardian/The Observer* bring the Landless Movement into focus while the Brazilian Government takes the second place.

Also noteworthy is the fact that Material processes are predominant in the 1999-2000 *Folha de S. Paulo* and *The Guardian/The Observer* corpus (464 occurrences – 48,59%), i.e., they are responsible for almost 50% of all processes in the corpus (Material processes = 464 occurrences against Mental + Relational +

Behavioural + Verbal + Existential = 491 occurrences), the difference being only 27.

Parties →	Landless Movement		Brazilian Government		Number of Processes ↓
Newspapers → Processes ↓	<i>Folha de S. Paulo</i> 1999-2000	<i>The Guardian/</i> <i>The Observer</i> 1999-2000	<i>Folha de S. Paulo</i> 1999-2000	<i>The Guardian/</i> <i>The Observer</i> 1999-2000	
Material →	163 (35,13%)	210 (45,26%)	49 (10,56%)	42 (9,05%)	464 (48,59%)
Mental →	7 (21,87%)	17 (53,13%)	4 (12,5%)	4 (12,5%)	32 (3,35%)
Relational →	67 (27,92%)	128 (53,33%)	32 (13,33%)	13 (5,42%)	240 (25,13%)
Behavioural →	—	2 (100%)	—	—	02 (0,21%)
Verbal →	52 (26,67%)	94 (48,20%)	31 (15,90%)	18 (9,23%)	195 (20,42%)
Existential →	9 (40,91%)	7 (31,82%)	4 (18,18%)	2 (9,09%)	22 (2,30%)
Subtotal →	298 (31,20%)	458 (47,96%)	120 (12,57%)	79 (8,27%)	—
Totals →	756 (79,16%)		199 (20,84%)		955

Table 2.3 - The occurrences of Material, Mental, Relational, Behavioural, Verbal, and Existential processes in relation to the Landless Movement and the Brazilian Government

These numbers show that the two newspapers are centrally concerned with actions and events and, by extension, with the participants who carry them out. This is also a strong indication that news producers favour the kind of active news stories which involve people effectively doing or acting and/or events taking place. In *Folha de S. Paulo* the number of Material processes directly involving the Landless Movement amounts to 163 occurrences (35,13% of the Material processes) and those involving the Brazilian Government to 49 (10,56%) occurrences and in *The Guardian/The Observer* the number of Material processes concerning the Landless Movement comes to 210 occurrences (45,26% of the Material processes) and those concerning the Brazilian Government to 42 (9,05%) occurrences. This is a sign that the preferred discursive site of news stories about agrarian reform has as the focal point the entity directly involved in the issue, i.e., the Landless Movement, the party which demands urgent and fair land distribution and the one which is usually alleged to be the main source of problems.

The roles played by the Landless Movement and the Brazilian Government are quite distinct in most of the Material processes. Whether it is the Landless Movement itself or any of its associates, the main recurrent emphasis in the news discourse is that the Landless Movement is responsible for the doings, usually wrongdoings. The clauses below are typical examples of the representation of the Landless Movement in *Folha de S. Paulo*.

Folha de S. Paulo - 1999 - [Text 4 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 1]

Um grupo de sem-terra (...)	tentou saquear	ontem	a loja de um dos (...)	no centro de Macció (AL)
Actor	Material	Circumstance	Goal	Circumstance

Folha de S. Paulo - 1999 - [Text 6 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 35]

[O Exército Zapatista]	[atacou]	tropas do governo mexicano
Actor	Material	Goal

Folha de S. Paulo - 2000 - [Text 1 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 12]

[Os agricultores]	interditaram	dois cruzamentos
Actor	Material	Goal

Folha de S. Paulo - 2000 - [Text 5 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 9]

Tereza dos Santos Freitas	participou	de 20 invasões
Actor	Material	Circumstance

On the other hand, the Brazilian Government is frequently depicted as the entity that suffers the consequences of the actions carried out by the Landless Movement, i.e., while the Landless Movement plays the role of the doer, the attacker, the Brazilian Government plays the role of the entity that is attacked or has to react in order to keep the social order. This is illustrated by the examples below.

Folha de S. Paulo - 1999 - [Text 1 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 12]

O empresário	entrou	ontem mesmo	com um pedido de (...)	no fórum de Araputanga, a cerca de (...)
Actor	Material	Circumstance	Material	Circumstance

Folha de S. Paulo - 1999 - [Text 4 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 15]

A PM	participou	da negociação para impedir o saque ontem no Bompreço.
Actor	Material	Circumstance

Folha de S. Paulo - 2000 - [Text 1 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 16]

A PM	pediu	reforço
Actor	Material	Goal

Folha de S. Paulo - 2000 - [Text 3 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 25]

Em Barceiros,	a Polícia Civil	despejou	os invasores	do engenho Una
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance

Most of the occurrences of Material processes in *The Guardian/The Observer*, however, represent the Landless Movement from a more positive perspective. It is not actually depicted as a threat for social stability nor are its members martyrs in a cause of unreasonable actions. The Landless Movement is essentially represented as an action-driven movement which aims mainly at turning dispossessed rural workers into productive Brazilian citizens. But it also aims at creating a more effective and realistic

system of education, efficient health service, providing small landowners with the basic facilities to work and produce in their own land, improve life in the countryside so that future generations do not have to migrate to urban areas to earn their living or live a miserable life, among others. In other words, the Landless Movement's wider objective is to construct a fairer society. But in order to achieve its objectives, the Landless Movement does not simply play the role of an evil-doer. It is also subjected to the attacks coming from the Brazilian Government whose agrarian reform policies seem not to satisfactorily respond to the needs of the landless, but legally protect the landed. These issues are illustrated by the following examples:

The Guardian/The Observer - 1999 [Text 1 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 47]

MST	offers	a model of self-empowerment	
Actor	Material	Goal	

The Guardian/The Observer - 1999 [Text 1 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 45]

[You]	compare	this picture	with the life of the slum dwellers of Sao Paulo
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance

The Guardian/The Observer - 2000 [Text 1 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 29]

The MST	has set up	1,800 schools	in its 2,600 settlements, attended by 110,000 pupils
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance

The Guardian/The Observer - 2000 [Text 4 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 9]

More than 1,000 people	have died	in the last 10 years in land disputes	
Actor	Material	Circumstance	

Unlike *Folha de S. Paulo* which regularly depicts the Landless Movement as an unconstructive and harmful entity and the Brazilian Government as the legal institution which undergoes the aggressions, *The Guardian/The Observer* describes the Landless Movement and the Brazilian Government as having both positive as well as negative features as a result of their acting to achieve their objectives. For example:

The Guardian/The Observer - 1999 [Text 4 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 22]

The Marxist-run MST	has succeeded in making	land reform a very big political issue in Brazil
Actor	Material	Goal

The Guardian/The Observer - 1999 [Text 4 - Paragraph 19 - Clause 43]

These aggressive measures	eroded	the wealth of public support previously enjoyed by the movement
Actor	Material	Goal

The Guardian/The Observer - 2000 [Text 2 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 4]

Brazil's shaky criminal justice system	comes under scrutiny	today with the high-profile retrial
Actor	Material	Circumstance

The Guardian/The Observer - 2000 [Text 6 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 39]

His administration	has given	land titles	to more than 250,000 families
Actor	Material	Goal	Beneficiary

Quantitatively (see Table 2.3), in *Folha de S. Paulo* there occur 67 Relational processes (27,92% of the Relational processes) involving the Landless Movement and 32 (13,33%) involving the Brazilian Government. Conversely, in *The Guardian/The Observer* the number of Relational processes involving the Landless Movement raises to 128 (53,33% of the Relational processes) and those involving the Brazilian Government lowers to 13 (5,42%). *The Guardian/The Observer's* preference for constructing the news stories through Relational processes, as far as the Landless Movement is concerned, is an indicator that the existence of a link prevailing between parties or events is pertinent to create an environment where one party, person, thing, or event is meaningfully related to another. In establishing a connection between participants, Relational processes disclose the way news producers represent the Landless Movement while it is engaged in some kinds of relationship. The following examples may help to shed light on the issue.

Folha de S. Paulo - 1999 [Text 2 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 32]

Adelar João Pizetta	é	coordenador de formação do MST
Identified	Relational	Identifier

Folha de S. Paulo - 1999 [Text 6 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 37]

[O] Estado de Chiapas	[é]	uma região marcada pela pobreza
Carrier	Relational	Attribute

Folha de S. Paulo - 2000 [Text 2 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 3]

Carpinteiros, pedreiros, metalúrgicos, motoristas, cozinheiras, (...) – todos	[estão]	desempregados
Carrier	Relational	Attribute

Folha de S. Paulo - 2000 [Text 6 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 22]

[A região de maior confronto agrário no Estado de São Paulo]	[é]	[o] Pontal do Paranapanema
Identifier	Relational	Identified

The Guardian/The Observer - 1999 [Text 3 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 18]

[MST]	had become	a family movement
Carrier	Relational	Attribute

The Guardian/The Observer - 1999 [Text 5 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 37]

More than 50% of Brazil's arable land	is owned	by 2% of the 160m population
Identifier	Relational	Identified

The Guardian/The Observer - 2000 [Text 1 - Paragraph 22 - Clause 72]

Brazil	has	one of the world's least equitable distributions of wealth
Carrier	Relational	Attribute

The Guardian/The Observer - 2000 [Text 3 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 22]

It [MST]	became	an international cause celebre
Carrier	Relational	Attribute

The typical examples above make it explicit that *Folha de S. Paulo* and *The Guardian/The Observer* approach the relationships between entities from distinct perspectives. Most Relational processes in *Folha de S. Paulo* aim at simply pointing out who is who without providing any further relevant information about agrarian reform. When this happens, the attention is usually drawn to a negative description of the Landless Movement. Conversely, *The Guardian/The Observer* focuses most of its attention on the very nature of the actions of the Landless Movement and brings into the scene its achievements. It also draws attention to the international character of the movement and the relevance it plays as a social organization which struggles against

land oligarchical forces in order to grant the landless a patch to produce and earn their living. Unlike *Folha de S. Paulo* where little or no attention at all is paid to the current disproportion of land distribution, *The Guardian/The Observer*, for example, recurrently emphasises that the richest 20% of the people hold 90% of the land while the poorest 40% own 1%. For instance, *The Guardian/The Observer* – 1999 – “Today, 1% of all land holdings still cover 45% of the country.” [Text 4 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 25], “More than 50% of Brazil's arable land is owned by 2% of the 160m population.” [Text 5 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 37], *The Guardian/The Observer* – 2000 – “The richest 20% of the people hold 90% of the land; while the poorest 40% own just 1% - the unfairest ratio in the world.” [Text 4 - Paragraph 4 - Clauses 6 and 7], and “The richest 20% of the people hold 90% of the land, while the poorest 40% own 1%.” [Text 5 - Paragraph 9 - Clauses 28 and 29], a piece of information not found in *Folha de S. Paulo*.

The Verbal processes also disclose some devices used by news producers to represent the Landless Movement in the Press. In *Folha de S. Paulo* the number of Verbal processes entailing the Landless Movement amounts to 52 occurrences (26,67% of the Verbal processes) and those involving the Brazilian Government to 31 (15,90%) occurrences and in *The Guardian/The Observer* the number of Verbal processes regarding the Landless Movement comes to 94 occurrences (48,20% of the Verbal processes) and those concerning the Brazilian Government to 18 (9,23%) occurrences. Here again, it is the Landless Movement which receives special attention on the part of news producers, particularly the British ones, but only through a closer analysis it is possible to pinpoint the internal mechanisms (cf. my discussion on the use of quotation in Hard News Reports in Chapter III, 3.4.4 and 3.5.4). In order to

illustrate the use of Verbal processes in the corpus, let us look at the following typical examples.

Folha de S. Paulo - 1999 [Text 2 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 23]

Stedile	deu explicações	sobre o que chamou de “movimentos camponeses messiânicos”, como o de Canudos
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage

Folha de S. Paulo - 1999 [Text 4 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 19]

“A negociação impediu a depredação da loja e o pânico dos clientes”,	disse	[Marco Aurélio Feitosa]
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer

Folha de S. Paulo - 2000 [Text 4 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 3a]

[FHC]	[anunciou]	que “não há badmeiro capaz de enfrentar a autoridade de um presidente (...)”
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage

Folha de S. Paulo - 2000 [Text 6 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 19]

“Agora é hora de erguer a cabeça e virar soldados”	[disse]	[o líder sem terra]
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer

The Guardian/The Observer - 1999 [Text 3 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 16]

In Brazil,	he	said,	neo-liberalism had strengthened big landowners
Circumstance	Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage

The Guardian/The Observer - 1999 [Text 4 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 1]

Brazil's Rural Workers Movement	says	its occupation tactics have won land and dignity for up to (...)
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage

The Guardian/The Observer - 2000 [Text 2 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 9]

[Human rights groups]	claim	vested interests were trying criminalise the leadership of Latin (...)
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage

The Guardian/The Observer - 2000 [Text 4 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 4]

"This shows that Brazil is increasingly less in the hands of the (...)"	said	Brazil's agrarian reform (...)
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer

Verbal processes are mainly utilized by news producers in order to lay emphasis on verbal action in which participants take part. The most evident reason why they are used to represent the Landless Movement is that they disconnect the discourse of the news producers from the discourse of the participants. In other words, when participants say, state, declare, add, explain, etc., they become solely

responsible for their own words and, in a way, news producers can not be assigned the responsibility for the discourse of others. Moreover, by doing so news producers also support their news stories with the actual words of those involved in the event, a strategy which gives the text an aura of fidelity to the main source of information, be it directly or indirectly reported. Despite the owner of the voice, the news discourse in *Folha de S. Paulo* depicts the Landless Movement as a dangerous entity even when the speaker is a member of the movement. For instance, *Folha de S. Paulo* – 1999 – “‘Amanhã temos uma reunião com o Incra (...) vamos voltar a fazer saques’, afirmou o coordenador do MST.” [Text 4 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 10], “Os Panteras Negras foram acusados de ações terroristas.” [Text 6 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 24], *Folha de S. Paulo* – 2000 – “FHC anunciou que ‘não há baderneiro capaz de enfrentar a autoridade de um presidente (...)’” [Text 4 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 3a], and “‘Agora é hora de erguer a cabeça e virar soldados. Não vamos lutar para perder ou morrer, mas também não vamos deixar de lutar por medo de perder’, disse o líder sem terra.” [Text 6 - Paragraph 6 - Clauses 19, 19a, and 19b]. In *The Guardian/The Observer*, regardless of the voice heard, what is uttered tends, most of the times, to represent the Landless Movement not as a wicked and anti-democratic entity, but rather as a movement which is likely to provide feasible solutions particularly for the social problems in the agricultural areas. Also frequently occurring in *The Guardian/The Observer* news stories is the voice of international organizations which usually advocate in favour of the Landless Movement actions and demand urgent measures from the Brazilian Government. For instance, *The Guardian/The Observer* – 1999 – “Amnesty International says the police investigation at Eldorado do Carajas has been wilfully obstructive.” [Text 5 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 21], “Julia Rochester, an Amnesty campaigner for Brazil, said that police identification tags were removed and

the victims' bodies were moved before forensic analysis could be undertaken." [Text 5 - Paragraph 9 - Clauses 22, 22a and 23], "She said: 'Our experience of the justice system in cases like this is that it is very rare to get a sound conviction.'" [Text 5 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 24], and *The Guardian/The Observer* – 2000 – "Human rights groups claim vested interests were trying criminalise the leadership of Latin America's largest popular movement." [Text 2 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 9]. When the voice comes from the Brazilian Government, who claims to have speeded up agrarian reform and that his administration has distributed more land than any other, it is used in favour of the democratic state of affairs which employs the Brazilian judicial system in order to make justice. The Landless Movement is here placed behind the scene and the emphasis is on the Brazilian law being utilized against the powerful big landowners, not in response to the Landless Movement's rights. For instance, *The Guardian/The Observer* – 2000 – "'This shows that Brazil is increasingly less in the hands of the big landowners and that more and more justice is being made,' said Brazil's agrarian reform minister, Raul Jungman." [Text 4 - Paragraph 3 - Clauses 4 and 4a].

This is definitely not the whole story, but perhaps enough has been said to draw certain conclusions. The Transitivity choices construe the Landless Movement as the main active participant. Through the Material processes, the Landless Movement is foregrounded in that it is ascribed the role of the doer, usually an evil-doer in *Folha de S. Paulo* (cf., for example, the meaning of the words/phrases in Table 1 and Table 2, Appendix C) whereas in *The Guardian/The Observer* it is mainly considered to be a movement in charge of deep-seated social changes in favour of the dispossessed. In *Folha de S. Paulo*, the Relational processes regularly associate the Landless Movement with entities or events which are likely to downgrade the very

nature of the movement. For instance, *Folha de S. Paulo* – 1999 – “Além do próprio EZLN, as principais ‘estrelas’ do encontro serão o MST, as Farcs (Colômbia) e até os Panteras Negras (EUA) (...)” [Text 6 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 22]. Conversely, *The Guardian/The Observer* establishes relationships which aim mainly at stressing the substantive role of the movement within both the national and international scenario. The opinion expressed by the participants in the Verbal processes in *Folha de S. Paulo* usually intends to depreciate the Landless Movement no matter who holds the voice. For instance, *Folha de S. Paulo* – 2000 – “Georges Lamazière, afirmou que FHC ‘não aceita que grupos busquem se infiltrar em manifestações pacíficas de outros grupos, inclusive visando a perturbá-las e a criar situações de violência’” [Text 4 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 9]. In *The Guardian/The Observer*, however, the tendency is mainly to bring into play the problem of land distribution. It does not only hear the voice of the Landless Movement and the Brazilian Government, but also of authoritative experts and leaves for the readership to reach their own conclusions.

The preceding Transitivity analysis provides only a picture of the representation of the Landless Movement in the Press, but what is evident is the rather striking state of ongoing social conflict in which both parties take part in the discursive narrative of Hard News Reports.

2.5.2 Organizing the Message: Theme + Rheme

In order to investigate the clause as a message and thus the choice of what clausal constituent should appear in Theme position, it is relevant to take a look at the way news producers place linguistic items within the structure of the clause in the corpus. The most recurrent pattern is unmarked Theme (741 – 77,59% of the occurrences) as against marked Theme (214 – 22,42% of the occurrences). Figure 2.7

summarizes the occurrences of unmarked and marked Themes in the corpus and Table 2.4 shows the quantitative distribution of thematic structure in *Folha de S. Paulo* and *The Guardian/The Observer*. The Theme analysis proper is shown in detail in Appendix E.

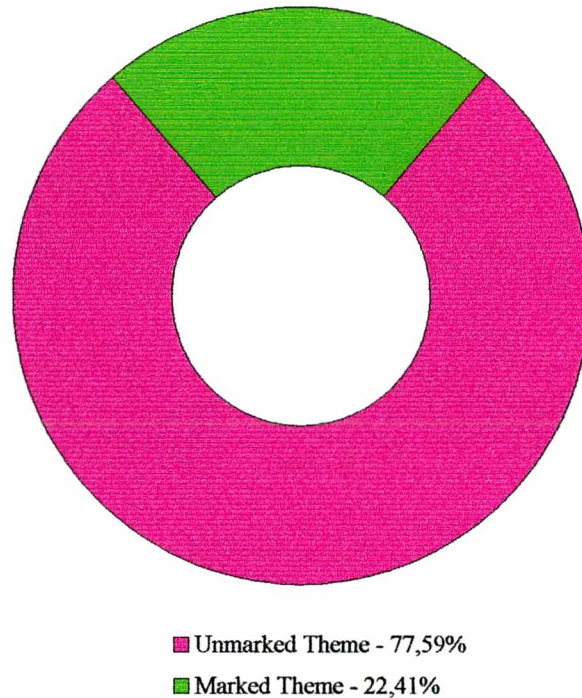


Fig. 2.7 - Overall occurrences of unmarked and marked Themes in the corpus

The analysis of the 955 clauses in the corpus reveals that most of the clauses are made up of unmarked Themes (741 – 77,59% of the occurrences). In *Folha de S. Paulo* most of the occurrences in unmarked Theme position concern the Landless Movement – (192 – 25,91% of the occurrences) – while the Brazilian Government takes the second place – (105 – 14,17% of the occurrences). In *The Guardian/The Observer* it is also the Landless Movement which is most recurrent in unmarked Theme position – (340 – 45,89% of the occurrences) – followed by the Brazilian

Government (104 – 14,03% of the occurrences). The number of marked Themes amounts to 214 occurrences, 22,41% of the total of 955 clauses analysed. In *Folha de S. Paulo* it is the Landless Movement which occurs in marked position most of the times (92 – 42,99% of the occurrences) while the Brazilian Government also takes the second place – (29 – 13,55% of the occurrences). Likewise, in *The Guardian/The Observer* it is also the Landless Movement which is most recurrent in marked position – (69 – 32,24% of the occurrences) – followed by the Brazilian Government – (24 – 11,22% of the occurrences).

Newspapers →	<i>Folha de S. Paulo</i> 1999-2000		<i>The Guardian/The Observer</i> 1999-2000		Totals ↓
	Landless Movement	Brazilian Government	Landless Movement	Brazilian Government	
Parties → Thematic Structure ↓					
Unmarked →	192 (25,91%)	105 (14,17%)	340 (45,89%)	104 (14,03%)	741 (77,59%)
Marked →	92 (42,99%)	29 (13,55%)	69 (32,24%)	24 (11,22%)	214 (22,41%)
Subtotal →	284 (29,74%)	134 (14,03%)	409 (42,83%)	128 (13,40%)	—
Totals →	418 (43,77%)		537 (56,23%)		955

Table 2.4 - Occurrences of unmarked and marked Thematic Structures in the corpus

The following are typical examples of unmarked and marked Themes in *Folha de S. Paulo* and *The Guardian/The Observer* corpus.

Folha de S. Paulo - 1999 [Text 5 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 1] - Unmarked Theme

O MST (...),	com a ajuda do dinheiro público, expande pelo país a sua “pedagogia transformadora”
Theme	Rheme

Folha de S. Paulo - 1999 [Text 2 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 13] - Marked Theme

Em tom professoral,	Stedile falou para a platéia de jovens durante mais de duas horas
Theme	Rheme

Folha de S. Paulo - 2000 [Text 2 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 3] - Unmarked Theme

Carpinteiros, pedreiros, metalúrgicos, motoristas, cozinheiras, (...) – todos	[estão] desempregados
Theme	Rheme

Folha de S. Paulo - 2000 [Text 1 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 11] - Marked Theme

Armados com foices, facões, lanças (...),	os agricultores tomaram cerca de cem metros da avenida
Theme	Rheme

The Guardian/The Observer - 1999 [Text 1 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 4] - Unmarked Theme

The Movimento Sem Terra (MST)	is the biggest direct action land-reform group in Latin America
Theme	Rheme

The Guardian/The Observer - 1999 [Text 4 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 34] - Marked Theme

The year after the first seeds were planted	Novo Sarandi was already selling to local markets
Theme	Rheme

The Guardian/The Observer - 2000 [Text 1 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 6] - Unmarked Theme

A waif-like grace	seemed to symbolise the hopes of millions of dispossessed Brazilians in their struggle for land
Theme	Rheme

The Guardian/The Observer - 2000 [Text 5 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 23] - Marked Theme

In the 16 years since its formation,	the MST has successfully gained land for 250,000 families
Theme	Rheme

The Landless Movement occurs as the topical Theme in the majority of the clauses and this thematic prominence coincides with the first elements in the Transitivity system which have the functions of Actor, Sayer, Carrier, etc., i.e., the participant who initiates the action. This corroborates what was previously discussed in the Transitivity analysis that the Landless Movement is represented as the party

responsible for carrying out most events and happenings. That is probably why the movement is prioritized in Theme position, i.e., the part of the clause which usually introduces the most important and most newsworthy component of the message, according to news producers, and on which the rest of the clause is elaborated. Also, the fact that the Theme conflates with the Subject seems to be another corroborative evidence of a strategy used by news producers to focus the reader's attention on a specific entity.

Paradoxically, the frequent recurrence of the Landless Movement in unmarked Theme position seems to have become the common-sense practice which naturalizes the Landless Movement role of action-taker within the Press scenario and this is, in turn, continuously delivered to the readership. By the same token, this device seems to be an efficient way to instil into newsreaders a negative picture of the Landless Movement under the guise of an active anti-social institution. Consequently, the impact initially intended by news producers seems to diminish in that the entity which is chosen to be in evidence becomes gradually familiar and commonsensical, and thus loses, to a large extent, its foregrounding status particularly within its co-text, i.e., the Landless Movement becomes naturalized. Although the Landless Movement is repeatedly ascribed the role of the main component of the message, the Theme – the launch pad of the clause – what really matters is what is to be publicized about it. In other words, much of the prominence which is normally attributed to the Theme, in this case, moves towards the Rheme, which typically holds the status of expanding the Theme. This may be better understood if the Information Structure (Given + New) network is considered.

I hold that for the present analysis Theme + Rheme and Given + New, while occurring simultaneously and always in that order in a single clause, i.e., in unmarked

thematic structure, are two interconnected systems which pave the way for newsreaders to make sense through the unfolding written text. In the case of the clauses analysed, news producers assume that newsreaders possess an accumulated and generalized knowledge concerning the role of the Landless Movement particularly within the Brazilian society which, in turn, allows them to place the Landless Movement as the familiar and widely-known starting-point of the message – Theme/Given position. In other words, there is nothing new about the Landless Movement which should deserve much emphasis, i.e., everyone shares common knowledge about the main participant. On the other hand, what is yet to be publicized and probably unknown turns up in the New/Rheme position. The prominent focal element provides subsequent unheard piece(s) of information about the Landless Movement.

In order to draw the readership attention to an outstanding issue, news producers make use of marked Themes – Theme/New – as in the example above in which the main leader of the Landless Movement is ironized for behaving as a teacher or when its members are compared to a gang when acting collectively, this being a feature typical of *Folha de S. Paulo*. In *The Guardian/The Observer* information placed in the Theme/New position provides further unfamiliar details about the Landless Movement which usually aim to contextualize its doings and achievements.

2.6 Concluding Remarks

The systemic-functional oriented approach to linguistic studies which treats language as a site of human experience in that language cannot be dissociated from meaning and which looks at how language acts upon and is constrained and influenced by the social context, discloses a number of textual features impossible to

be explicated by structural approaches which privilege syntax. In the foregoing investigation of the representation of the Landless Movement in the Press, two main aspects are then taken into account, viz., the context in which events take place and the co-text through which events are publicized, i.e., the news stories. It is the relationship between the functional language arrangement and the social environment which allows for a textual analysis that provides a more realistic picture of the issue under investigation.

The social reality depicted in the news and investigated through the Hallidayan systemic functional linguistics rationale by means of the System of Transitivity and the System of Theme reveals that the Landless Movement representation in *Folha de S. Paulo* and in *The Guardian/The Observer* is *de facto* a mediatory mechanism which places participants in the Hard News Reports as possessing opposing values which characterize them as having either negative or positive features. Rather than providing unbiased pieces of factual information, Hard News Report, as far as the corpus analysed is concerned, is thus an opinionated genre in that it (re)presents facts from the perspective of news producers and simultaneously mediates between reality and readership by providing a single picture of real facts. Along these lines Montgomery (1995, p. 250) pertinently states that

(...) reality is not 'out there', easily available to be grasped in any straightforward and simple way; it is socially constructed, with language playing a centrally important role, so that *the patterning of vocabulary and sentence structure shows us reality in a particular light and guides our comprehension of it.* [emphasis added]

Notes

1. John Rupert Firth was a British linguist who himself was influenced by the anthropological studies of Bronislaw Malinowski. For example, the key concepts of 'context of situation' and 'context of culture' were primarily introduced by Malinowski in his 1923 "The Problem of Meaning in Primitive Languages.", Supplement 1, pp. 296-336. In: Ogden, C. K. & Richards, I. A. (eds.) *The Meaning of Meaning*. Routledge & Kegan Paul, London. According to Malinowski, language could just be appropriately used and understood only and if only contextual components – aspects of a given situation and culture – were taken into account. These concepts were later developed by the linguists J. R. Firth and M. A. K. Halliday to refer to social components which constrain the use of language.
2. This is a concept widely used particularly in literary criticism, for example, the deconstruction method introduced by Jacques Derrida which aims to point out the intrinsic textual paradoxes and contradictions. But I should make it clear that I employ the term here in its denotative meaning. Deconstruction means the process of breaking up the text in order to reveal its bits and pieces, i.e., its constitutive components, so as to bring to light invisible structural features otherwise impossible to be disclosed.
3. Mind that the arrows indicate the directions the numbers and their percentages in Tables 2.1 through to 2.4 should be read.
4. Halliday (1994, p. 138) accords primary importance to the Material, Mental (which is out of the scope of the current analysis), and Relational processes as being "(...) the cornerstones of the grammar in its guise as a theory of experience."

CHAPTER III

THE INVISIBLE MACHINERY BEHIND

THE LANDLESS MOVEMENT REPRESENTATION

“Facts..., facts..., facts...”

Charles Dickens. In: *Hard Times*.

“Words, words, words.”

Shakespeare. In: *Hamlet*.

“Boatos, boatos, boatos.”

Machado de Assis. In: *A Semana I*.

3.1 Initial Remarks

This chapter focuses on the interrelationship between ideology and language and how these two assist in the process of representation of the Landless Movement in the Press. More specifically, I concentrate on the way ideology invests language – in this case the language of Hard News Reports – by investigating how lexicogrammatical structures constitute a site where ideology is materialized. I start with a concise account of the origins of the word ideology and how the seminal concept evolved throughout history. Then I introduce and discuss the perspective of ideology I use in the present work – the core theoretical concern of this chapter.

Finally, I apply the adopted rationale for the concept of ideology to the corpus in order to find out 'how' the lexicogrammatical structures of the discourse of Hard News Reports are articulated so as to have embedded hidden ideological features and, in turn, reveal 'who' and/or 'what' party is likely to be benefited from such ideologically loaded linguistic occurrences, if any is found.

The relevance to investigate the phenomenon of ideology – whatever it may be and wherever it may occur – and language lies in the fact that news texts are man-made constructs which aim at depicting reality. In other words, they are artificial reproductions of social events seen through the perspective of a whole editorial staff under the auspices of the Press as a credible social institution. In spite of the impartiality advocated by the Press, newsreaders are offered accounts, of usually unscheduled events, whose construction starts with the newsgathering until the final news story version is ready to be consumed by the readership. The event stories, usually retold based on reports provided by assumed eyewitnesses and news agencies, reach the public as accurate pieces of information. The linguistic fabrication of news events is, consequently, much inclined to be saturated with influential viewpoints ranging from the news source itself through to the ultimate editing processes in the newsroom. Downes and Miller (1998, p. 36) pertinently say that

Ideology underpins every political system and therefore underpins the conditions in which media texts are created. The strength of the dominant ideology and the challenges made to it by alternative ideologies are usually regarded as important in media studies because media texts are the visible manifestations of the production and circulation of current ideologies.

The question, however, is not whether a news story is intentionally constructed in a biased way in order to serve a specific purpose or whether the journalist in the byline, ultimately responsible for the text, has been aware of the ideological processes

at work in the construction of the Hard News Report. In both cases, the most important factor is the process because the production of a news story is the result of a number of newsmakers – news source, chief reporter, journalist, subeditor, editor, receiving media (Bell, 1991, p. 35) – all of them consciously or unconsciously intervening in the construction of the news story until the final version is ready to be publicized. Montgomery (1995, p. 248) appropriately comments on the issue stating that

It is not the intention behind these linguistic patterns that counts; it is their intrinsic significance, how they are interpreted, and their effects on patterns of thought and behaviour that matters.

On the face of these considerations, the site where language and ideology merge in order to represent an event through a news story is the main concern of the following sections.

3.2 On Language and Ideology

3.2.1 Classical Views of Ideology

Etymologically, the word ideology comes from Greek – *ideo-* + *-log(o)-* + *-ia* – (see the dictionary entries in Appendix B), literally meaning the ‘study or knowledge of ideas’. It was originally coined by the French revolutionary aristocrat Destutt de Tracy in 1801¹ who founded the discipline (*Idéologie*) in order to account primarily for the scientific analysis of ideas and sensations (Eagleton, 1994, pp. 1-2; Abbagnano, 1998, p. 531).

Due to its several philosophical interpretations throughout history, the word ideology has turned into an overloaded term which makes it a meaningful – though slippery – concept to write about and, more dangerously, to use as a framework or a

starting point to investigate any given corpus. Any attempt to provide an all-purpose and a fully-fledged theory of ideology would end up with a simplistic, incomplete, inconsistent, and refutable definition or explanation for the term. In other words, there has existed, so far, no common single account for ideology. The many interpretations for the concept of ideology have made it become so thoroughly discussed and employed to support so many historical and particular assumptions that no one would use it today as it was originally conceived of – a discipline whose main aim was the philosophical study of the processes of human reasoning, thoughts, and ideas.

It was because of Napoleon's antipathy for the views shared by the ideologues, as he has been credited to name Destutt de Tracy and his associates, that the modern concept of ideology gained its negative aura. The harmful connotation of ideology then was born of the colliding authoritarian political practices by Napoleon and the scientific rationalism of the ideologues, who were alleged to be idealists, dreamers, castle-builders, utopians, and visionaries, with neither political sense nor concrete knowledge of reality (Eagleton, 1994, p. 5; Abbagnano, 1998, pp. 531-532).

The major current perspectives of the theories of ideology owe their statuses mainly to Karl Marx, Friedrich Engels, Antonio Gramsci, and Louis Althusser – the most representative classical philosophers and theorists on the issue.

The discourse of political and economic theory forwarded by Karl Marx (1818-1883), together with Friedrich Engels (1820-1895), has provided the most influential development of the concept of ideology in its modern sense. Although their main concern is how the proletarians can get hold of the political and economic power, Marx and Engels advocate that ideology is the way through which the dominant class publicises, maintains, and instils its ideas, so that the ideas of the working class are actually the ones the ruling class chooses for them. From their

perspective, society is divided into two distinct social groups, viz., the bourgeoisie – the class that owns the socio-economic power, property, and the means of production – and the proletariat – the dispossessed wage-earning labour class that provides the workforce. Once the distinct social roles of the bourgeoisie and the proletariat are well-established, each group has its own discrete ideas and concepts of life and thus holds distinct ideologies. According to Marx and Engels (see Chaui, 1982, pp. 32-125; Eagleton, 1994, pp. 1-20), there exists a broad societal structure governing the economic interests and consequently the relationship between social classes and groups. This social relationship consists of a specific system of misleading beliefs made up of false-consciousness which is responsible for the production of meanings and ideas. These, in turn, are suitably used to meet the interests of the various strata of society. Ideology, in the Marxist economic tradition, is a mechanism which aims at structuring societies in such a way that the group holding power is enabled to have the maximum control over the other stratum of society with the minimum of conflict in order to obtain the highest profits. This is achieved through the dissemination of values, beliefs, symbol systems, conceptions of the world, among others, which work as a legitimising ideational apparatus. In other words, for Marx and Engels, ideology is essentially a ruling-class theoretical device responsible for the production, dissemination, and application of particular socio-political doctrines. And it is the capitalist ruling-class that ultimately receives the political and economic benefits of such social practice.

Antonio Gramsci (1891-1937) (see Eagleton, 1994, pp. 1-20), further developed the Marxist economic-based concept of ideology by introducing his theory of hegemony. In Gramsci's terms, hegemony is the condition under which the subjugated classes and/or groups approvingly consent their exploitation by their rulers

in society. This process is accomplished by the widespread inculcation of particular elitist ideology which aims at manipulating minority groups' judgments in order to guide and control people's reasoning and behaviour. Consequently, they take it as natural and accept the social relations proposed by the dominant ruling groups and institutions. In so doing, subordinate individuals, classes, and/or groups legitimise the social structure in which one social group and/or class accepts to be dominated and controlled by another.

The French Marxist-philosopher Louis Althusser (1918-1990) advocates that the concept of ideology should not be exclusively explained by means of its economic nature. He postulates that in a class-based society where one class implants its values and beliefs on the other(s), the concept of ideology encompasses a more complex kind of relationship than the cause-and-effect economic nature of ideology claimed by Marx and Engels. For Althusser, ideology consists of a network set of complex and all-pervasive social practices in which all classes and groups participate in continuous co-operation – the participatory model – with the oppressed classes and groups approving their oppression. In other words, ideology is the representation of the relationship between individuals and their actual condition of existence, i.e. the role they play in society in respect to material practices. In order to achieve control, Althusser contends that the state makes use of the Ideological State Apparatus (ISA) which aims at disseminating and maintaining state ideology via social institutions such as education, religion, law, politics, family, culture, media, among others. The state also makes use of the Repressive State Apparatus (RSA) whose function is to coerce the subordinated classes and groups to accept, use, and exercise the prevailing dominant ideological practices (Althusser, 1969/1970; 1994).

Although Althusser, among the classic philosophers of ideology, is the one who most explicitly stresses the importance of language in the articulation of ideological processes, he keeps the discussion at a rather philosophical level. He highlights that the key ideological role language plays within the system of social representation, i.e., discourse, the domain of language, is impregnated with ideology. Althusser (1969/1970, p. 245) even stresses that

Linguists and those who appeal to linguistics for various purposes often run up against difficulties which arise because they ignore the action of the ideological effects in all discourses – including even the scientific discourses.

Rather than being a tool used to depict the world, language is the instrument which mediates the relationships between subjects and the actual reality they are part of. In other words, language constructs the physical reality and as such it becomes the lens through which individuals see the world around them.²

Eagleton (1994, p. 15) provides a simplified but objective summary of the history of the modern concepts of ideology in which he includes other influential theorists who have also discussed the issue. He says that

A history of the concept ideology could be written in terms of what is taken as its opposite, all the way from 'seeing reality as it is' (the early Marx and Engels) and 'a consciousness of totality' (Lukács) to 'science' (Althusser) and 'a recognition of difference' (Adorno). Ideology can be theoretically elaborate (Thomism, Social Darwinism) or a set of spontaneous, automated habits (what the French sociologist Pierre Bourdieu calls *habitus*). It can mean, too vaguely, 'socially conditioned or socially interested thought' or, too narrowly, 'false ideas which help to legitimate an unjust political power'. The term may be pejorative, as with Marx or Mannheim; positive, as (sometimes) with Lenin; or neutral, as with Althusser. There are those like Lucien Goldmann for whom ideologies are highly structured, internally coherent formations, and others like Pierre Macherey for whom they are amorphous and diffuse. Whereas Adorno sees ideology as falsely homogenising, Fredric Jameson views its essential gesture as absolute binary opposition. And there is the odd right-wing academic like Kenneth Minogue for whom left-wingers have ideology while conservatives see things as they really are.

Despite the large number of theoretical approaches to the concept, ideology is still a word which has been widely used as the umbrella term for theories usually supporting economic, political, and social agendas. Behind these theories lies a body of ideas which fundamentally constitutes the theoretical basis of systems of government. In this way, ideology still retains its status of an abstract framework of ideas to be applied as a social, political, and economic program. For instance, the ideology behind the Marxist economic and political views maintains that if any historical change is about to happen, that will be due to working class struggle and that communism and socialism will eventually supplant capitalism which in turn will give rise to classless societies. Seen thus, ideology is a kind of conceptual formula which aims at organizing societies by imposing planned frames of economic, political, and social policies, so much so that one can talk about the Nazi ideology, Fascist ideology, Marxist ideology, Stalinist ideology, Marxist-Leninist ideology, totalitarian/dictatorial ideology, monetarist ideology, the free market ideology, bourgeois ideology, religious ideology, conservative ideology, and so forth.

Although the word ideology still carries an overloaded negative connotation, probably due to its former use connected to authoritarian, centralized government systems marked by persecution of any political opposition and arbitrary purges, the concept of ideology has changed through time and nowadays it has, particularly among scholars, a much broader and less political status. Undoubtedly, it is impossible to completely disconnect any concept of ideology from a given social and political milieu, but much of its assumption has now shifted towards the individual as a reasoning subject, rather than as a receptacle on which ideas are imposed and stored and whose way of thinking and behaving is carefully controlled. That is, rather than being a conscious or unconscious adherent of an ideology, individuals are social

subjects who develop their own discrete ideologies as a result of their continuous exposition to social exchanges of all sorts and the interpersonal relations they undergo within their social milieu.

3.2.2 The Socio-Cognitive Nature of Ideology

The theoretical framework employed in this research is mainly functional and in this sense Halliday (1978, p. 18) states that “A functional theory is not a theory about the mental processes involved in the learning of the mother tongue; it is a theory about the social processes involved.” Along these lines, Halliday proposes that an infant’s linguistic system acquisition process takes place because language serves several functions in his life. Whatever kind of sound a child utters it *is* language, even at the pre-linguistic stage of linguistic growth. Halliday (1978, p. 18-19) claims that there occur seven initial developmental functions of language in a child’s process of language acquisition, namely, “1. Instrumental (‘I want’): satisfying material needs; 2. Regulatory (‘do as I tell you’): controlling the behaviour of others; 3. Interactional (‘me and you’): getting along with other people; 4. Personal (‘here I come’): identifying and expressing the self; 5. Heuristic (‘tell me why’): exploring the world around and inside one; 6. Imaginative (‘let’s pretend’): creating a world of one’s own; 7. Informative (‘I’ve got something to tell you’): communicating new information.” Although this is a sociolinguistic rather than a psycholinguistic approach and according to Halliday (1978, p. 18), “(...) they are about different things”, I hold the view that the cognitive component *is* as central in the acquisition of language as the sociological one, even if the process is considered from a functional point of view (see a more detailed discussion below).

The essential role language plays in the construction of social subjects is best depicted by Halliday (1978, pp. 12-16). According to his view, in order for human beings to fully build up their personality, they undergo a series of developmental moves which have language as the very central mediator component. To put it plainly, 'a biological human being' becomes 'a member of a group of people' by means of acquiring and making use of the language spoken by such a group. He develops into 'a distinctive person' by constructing, via language, his own idiolect. This then leads him back, again through language, into 'the complex relations within society'. And it is also by means of language that he finally constructs his 'personality' out of the role(s) he plays in the social milieu he is then part of. In other words, language plays the pivotal role in the process of human socialization and it is thus the core component that mediates the whole social interrelationships in which human beings engage and become members of. This oversimplified exposition is best captured by Halliday (1978, pp. 14-15) and reproduced here in Figure 3.1.

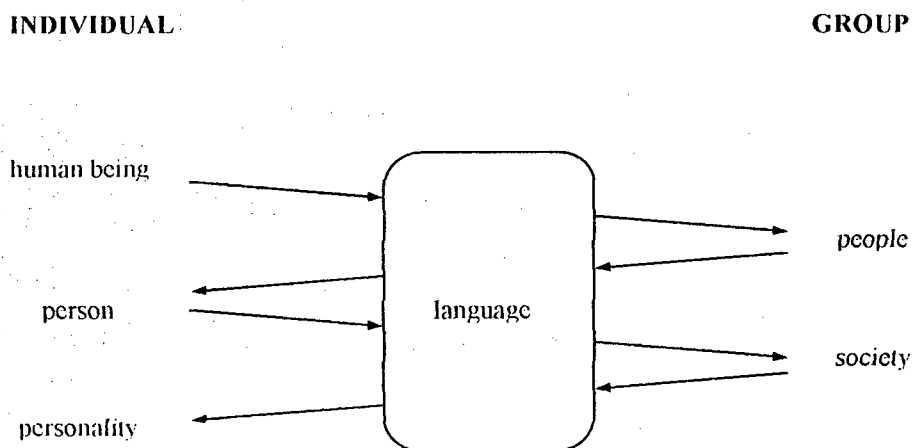


Fig. 3.1 - The social nature of human beings and the role of language
After Halliday (1978, p. 15)

Along these lines, Halliday (1978, p. 9) postulates that the very nature of human beings is thus essentially social and he claims that

In the development of the child as a social being, language has the central role. Language is the main channel through which the patterns of living are transmitted to him, through which he learns to act as a member of a 'society' – in and through the various social groups, the family, the neighbourhood, and so on – and *to adopt its 'culture', its modes of thought and action, its beliefs and its values.* (...) It happens indirectly, through the accumulated experience of numerous small events, insignificant in themselves, in which his behaviour is guided and controlled, and in the course of which he contracts and develops personal relationships of all kinds. All this takes place through the medium of language. [emphasis added]

Despite the fact that Halliday does not take the cognitive component into account in his functional theory of language, there definitely exists a linking component, other than the social one, which allows for a biological human being to become a subject through a process mediated by language. An inborn operational mechanism would correspond to the cognitive component in the network which is responsible for managing the cognitive operations. My simplified model for the role of the composite socio-cognitive component is illustrated schematically in Figure 3.2.

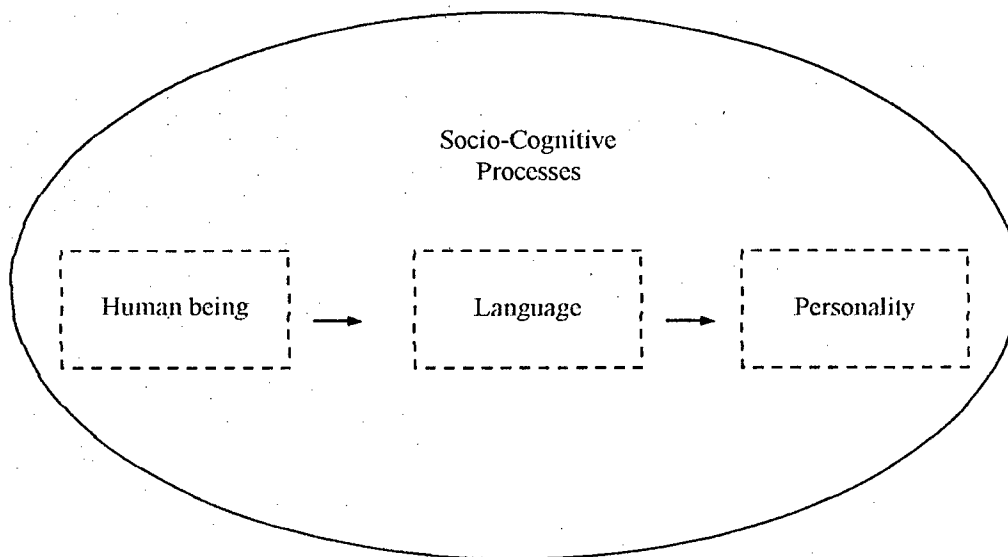


Fig. 3.2 - A socio-cognitive model at work

So, although Halliday (1978, p. 15) declares that he has a neutral position as far as cognition in relation to language development is concerned, I believe that, on the grounds of what was briefly discussed above, a compound socio-cognitive component is likely to be highly helpful, particularly in the study of the interrelationship between language and ideology, in order to account for the way(s) social events are represented.

Since language is an inherent feature of human beings and learning a language “(...) is the main channel through which the patterns of living are transmitted (...) and the culture, the modes of thought and action, beliefs and values are adopted” (Halliday, 1978, p. 9), I can speculate that language and ideology share at least a common feature – that of being inherent to human beings. I take it that (1) the process of acquiring ideology takes place simultaneously as that of language, that (2) ideology is embedded in language and that (3) ideology is thus linguistically realized. Just like language, ideology also has a socio-cognitive nature which is actualised by discourse, i.e., language in actual shared communicative use. In other words, language and ideology are two sides of the same coin in their very origin. In order to best visualize the association between language and ideology, I rephrase Halliday’s (1978, p. 15) model and place ideology, together with language, as the central component mediating the development of the biological human being into an individual. My suggested model looks as Figure 3.3.

This is an attempt to put in perspective in the present study two key components of discourse, namely language and ideology, in order to investigate the linguistic representation of social events. I speculate that language interacts with

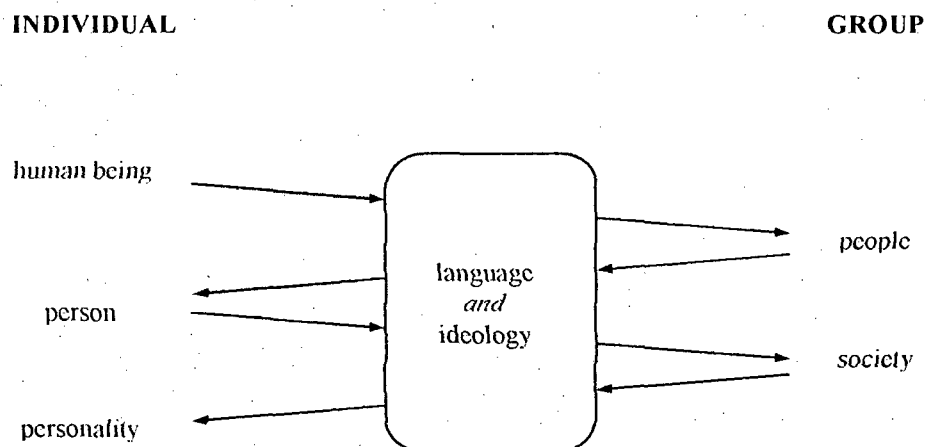


Fig. 3.3 - The social nature of human beings and the role of the language-ideology component
Adapted from Halliday (1978, p. 15)

ideology at a hidden structural interface level through which events are turned into print news stories and in turn are (re)presented to the readership for interpretation and consumption. In other words, language and ideology harmoniously coexist as a single entity and this entity is materialized linguistically via discourse. Together, the components language-ideology and discourse make up a dual structural system which may account for the construction of, in this specific case, Hard News Reports which depict the representation of the Landless Movement in the Press. According to van Dijk (1998, p. viii)

Though usually of later vintage, extant work on discourse and ideology does of course emphasize the important role of text and talk in the (re)production of ideologies. To my knowledge, however, among the many studies of ideology, some of which also deal with language or discourse, there is not a single one that details *how exactly* ideology shapes text and talk, and conversely, how it is formed, acquired or changed by discourse and communication.

Within this complex scenario, the study of print news stories requires an approach to the concept of ideology which accounts for a more down-to-earth and

detailed inquiry into the role ideology plays in relation to the social milieu. An investigation of the production of Hard News Reports calls for a framework which places ideology at the heart of social representations, i.e., the intertwined relationship between language-ideology and discourse.

According to van Dijk (1995, pp. 244-245) ideologies are cognitive because “(...) they involve mental objects such as ideas, thought, beliefs, judgements and values”, they are social because “(...) not only dominant groups, but also dominated groups have ideologies that control their self-identification, goals and actions. The same is true for other social groups, such as professionals (journalists, professors), action groups (anti-racists, environmentalists, Pro-Life anti-abortionists, etc.), or organizations and institutions (bureaucracies, the police)”, and they are sociocognitive because they are “(...) essentially *shared* (or contested) by the members of social groups. In the same way as there is no ‘private’ language, there are, according to our definition, no personal ideologies. (...) In the same way as (grammars, norms and rules of) natural languages, ideologies are *both* cognitive, while involving basic principles of social knowledge, judgement, understanding and perception, *and* social, while being shared by members of groups and institutions, and related to the socio-economic or political interests of these groups.”

The framework for theorizing the concept of ideology proposed by van Dijk (1998) seems to be a suitable analytical device to apply for the investigation of the role played by language-ideology in the production of Hard News Reports. For him, a tripartite system consisting of cognition, discourse, and society orbits around ideology. In other words, ideology, the core component for the construction and representation of a society, is made up of the interrelationship between cognitive

processes, discursive practices, and social structures – one shaping and being shaped by the others.

The concept of ideology as proposed by van Dijk (1998) can be diagrammatically visualized in Figure 3.4.

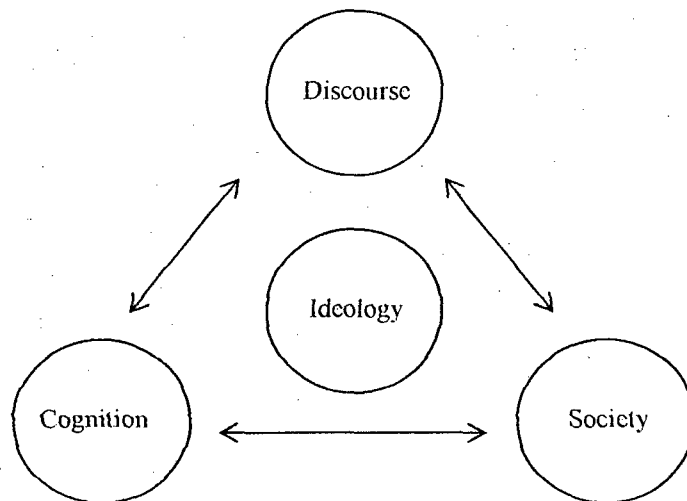


Fig. 3.4 - The pivotal role of ideology
After van Dijk (1998, *passim*)

On the basis of what was briefly discussed above, I can take the basic premise that language and ideology are at the very heart of human nature and *both* constitute the most innate human device responsible for the socio-cognitive development of human beings.

It is not my intention, however, to fully work out the intricacies of each of the concepts introduced above because such an enterprise is beyond the scope of this research and would thus require a whole research in its own right. As a theoretical framework, I draw on the concept of ideology in order to verify how it is realized via language as a means to construct discourse. This does not mean however that cognition, discourse, and society are peripheral components of the system nor that they are necessarily of less importance. Due to the purpose and the nature of the

current research, they do not play a central role as analytical tools and thus fall outside. But I broadly refer to them *passim* and provide workable definitions whenever I feel they are required and appropriate. The tailoring of the theory is necessary to meet the requirements of the research procedures and to focus the investigation upon the main object of analysis – the representation of the Landless Movement in the Press.

I said above that any attempt to define the concept of ideology would inevitably end up with a vague, incomplete, and simplistic definition. But since it is impossible to ponder upon, consider and apply all the nuances of such a complex concept, I have to limit its scope in order to make it possible to use it as a theoretical and analytical framework. Rather than providing a reductionist definition, I introduce and discuss some central aspects of the concept and when new features come up I discuss them appropriately.

The notion of ideology, by its very origin (see 3.2.1 and Appendix B), no matter if considered from a psychological, historical, or sociological perspective, encompasses the central notion of idea. In this respect, van Dijk (1998, p. 15) claims that “Whatever else ideologies are, they have always been associated with socially shared *ideas*.” According to van Dijk (1998, p. 15), the notion of idea, in its commonsense everyday meanings, can be broadly summarized as

1. Ideas are objects or processes in/of the mind.
2. Ideas are the products of thinking or thought.
3. Ideas are part of knowledge.
4. Ideas may be personal or socially shared.
5. More specifically, ideas are new, original interesting thoughts and about important issues.

Given the outline above, it can be claimed that ideas have an internal structure comprising major concepts such as socio-cultural beliefs, values, background

knowledge, mental models, opinions, attitudes, customs, behaviours, political orientation, experiences, assumptions, expectations, among others (van Dijk, 1995 and 1998 *passim*), all of them at work within the language-ideology relationship. The

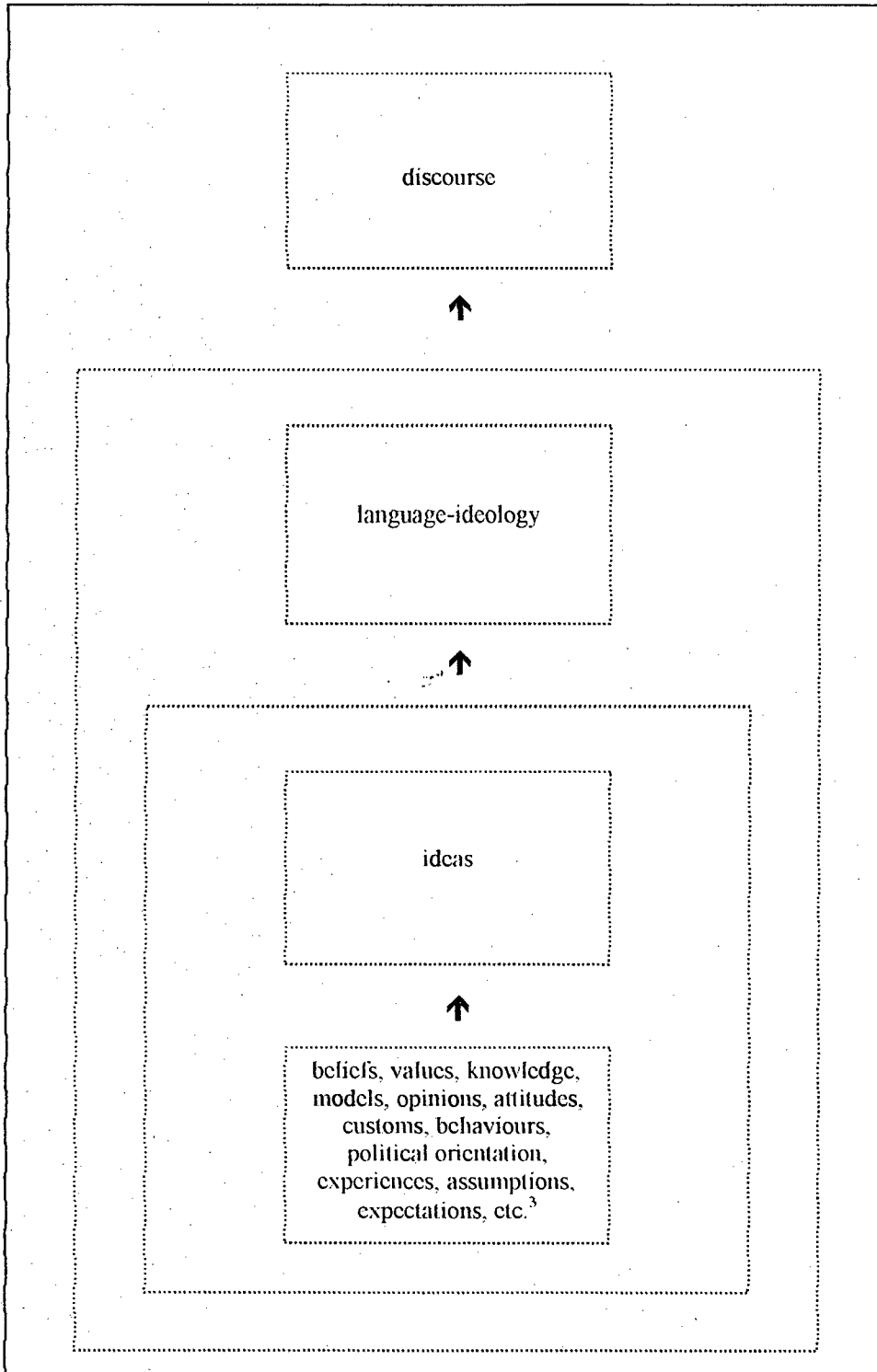


Fig. 3.5 - The innermost structure of ideology in relation to discourse

interconnection between the components of the system can be construed as in Figure 3.5. Although they are displayed compartmentalized, all the components co-occur within a harmonious system in which each element plays an imperceptible role in shaping the personal and/or group identity of an individual without permission. Once the shared assumptions of society are acquired and the individual constructs and shapes his perceptions of the social milieu he lives in, he is, in theory, able to make use, produce and reproduce, maintain or change social ideological practices. This process mostly occurs via spoken and/or written language through which the individual verbalizes his ideas. The language-ideology composite is actually the instrument used to bridge the gap between abstract inner ideas and concrete outer world by means of discourse.

Although “(...) ideologies reside in texts (...)” (Fairclough, 1991, p. 118), it is primarily the text consumer who is likely to identify, or not, the occurrence of ideological discourse, depending on his/her ideological orientation. As such, ideologies may exert some kind and level of influence on the reader, on the one hand. On the other, the embedded ideological lexicogrammatical structure(s) may be simply ignored and, in this case, for the perception of the reader, it becomes a plain meaningless text as far as the ideological intents are concerned. This is in fact the ideal setting where ideology works at its best. It is therefore the socio-cultural knowledge the reader retrieves while reading the text that creates a meaningful site where ideology is brought to life and where it actually resides. Fairclough (1991, p. 118) comments that

(...) meanings are produced through interpretations of texts and texts are open to diverse interpretations and because ideological processes appertain to discourses as whole social events – they are processes between people – not to the texts which are produced, distributed and interpreted as moments of such events.

Nevertheless, an investigation into the utilization of lexicogrammatical structures, independent of the effect of the text on the reader, is likely to reveal to what extent and which structures are used in order to produce a biased discourse. In so doing, the investigation of news texts may possibly indicate how the language-ideology composite functions in the dissemination of contemporary ideologies via news discourse.

The definition for the concept of ideology provided by van Dijk (1995, p. 248) summarizes the socio-cognitive theoretical framework and provides a handy tool to be employed in the current research. According to him

Ideologies are basic frameworks of social cognition, shared by members of social groups, constituted by relevant selections of sociocultural values, and organized by an ideological schema that represents the self-definition of a group. Besides their social function of sustaining the interests of groups, ideologies have the cognitive function of organizing the social representations (attitudes, knowledge) of the group, and thus indirectly monitor the group-related social practices, and hence also the text and talk of its members.

According to Downes and Miller (1998, p. 28), in order to find out the relationships between media and ideologies it is necessary to mind that “(1) The media communicate ideas, (2) The media represent outside reality to audiences, (3) All texts are produced by people, (4) All individual producers of texts and media institutions have viewpoints, (5) No text can exist without offering its consumers a position, or ‘point-of-view’ to adopt, (6) Audiences make meanings and sense from texts in accordance with their existing knowledge, (7) All media institutions are owned by somebody.”

Before proceeding to demonstrate how language and ideology merge linguistically to create a desired kind of discourse, I should comment on the meaning

of the concept of representation and the role it plays while mediating between reality and audience.

3.3 Representation: What is it about?

Because ideology, like language, is pervasive in human interaction, we have a natural predisposition to perceive social events ideologically, i.e., through a specific perspective. It is therefore impossible to see the world exactly the way it is, not only because no one is immune to the inevitable influences exerted by the wide range of ideology-based and socio-cognitive socialization processes, but also because it is impossible for anyone to act upon the world coherently without holding a view or defending an opinion usually based on the pre-existing knowledge unconsciously, but also sometimes consciously, acquired and experienced in life. In other words, we see the world through the eyes of others, i.e., through the eyes of social institutions (e.g. school, law, family, religion, language, media, etc.) everyone is part of – i.e., the world is represented to us. In the view of this, the world we live in and, particularly, the world which is beyond our eyes is presented to us via a myriad of complex mechanisms, including discourse structures. According to Montgomery (1995, p. 223)

Language enables us to talk *with* each other. At the same time it enables us to talk *about something*. It provides us with not just a mode of interaction, but also with a capacity for representation.

A brief analysis of the Brazilian and the MST flags (see Figure 3.6) may disclose some insightful issues concerning the symbolic visual mechanisms used to represent standpoints of the socio-cognitive practices of each institution. At the same time, this may help to understand the nature of the concept of representation, its location within discourse, and the way(s) it works.



Fig. 3.6 - The Brazilian and the MST flags

The main objective of a nation's or of a movement's flag is to establish and maintain group cohesion, loyalty, and construct a common identity in order for members to feel a sense of belonging. This is achieved through a series of symbols used to arouse feelings no one is really aware of, but to which everyone reacts particularly, in moments of crisis.⁴

Brazilian school children soon learn that the colours of the geometric Brazilian flag symbolise the major “treasures” of the nation. The colour green in the rectangular field represents the lush woods and forests covering the whole country. The large yellow shaped-diamond field on the green background represents the Brazilian wealth in gold. The blue sphere in the center of the yellow diamond represents the Brazilian sky and the twenty-seven white stars on the blue field represent the twenty-six States and the Federal District which together constitute the Brazilian Federal Republic. And there is a white banner in the middle of the blue sphere with the slogan ‘Order and Progress’.

For the Landless Movement, the flag is a symbol of the national character of the fight for agrarian reform and the symbology lying behind its composition is more

complex than that of the Brazilian flag described above. The MST flag is made up of a large red rectangular field with the emblem of the movement at the center. The emblem is composed of a white circle bordered in black. Along the circumference, the words *Movimento dos Trabalhadores Rurais Sem Terra - Brasil* are inscribed. Also inside the circle, there is a green map of Brazil on which the figures of a man and a woman, from the waist up, can be seen. The man is holding up a machete in his right hand and the woman is wearing a red shirt.

The flag bears the colours red, white, black, and green. The colour white represents the peace for which the movement fights, which can only be won when there is social justice for all. The colour red represents the blood that flows in the human veins and the determination to fight for agrarian reform and for the transformation of society. The colour black represents the mourning and the tribute to all the workers who have already fallen fighting for a new society. The colour green represents the big *latifundia* the movement has to occupy and turn productive and also the hope that the movement's fight will be victorious in each occupied *latifundium*. The map of Brazil represents that the MST is an organization that wishes to take the fight for agrarian reform to the whole country. The man and the woman represent the need to engage men and women and whole families in the struggle. The machete represents the tools of work, struggle, and resistance.⁵ In short, what seems to be represented by the MST flag is the idea that socialism is a viable socio-political system.

On the other hand, the significant colours and drawings of the MST flag in turn make indirect allusions to the revolutionary symbols used to represent the Union of the Soviet Socialist Republics after the 1917 Russian Revolution. The final version of the Soviet flag which was adopted in 1923 can be seen in Figure 3.7.

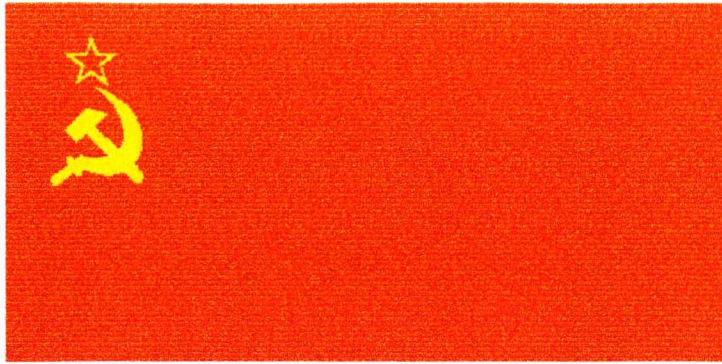


Fig. 3.7 - The USSR flag

The colour red represents the blood that has been spilt by workers all over the world in the fight for their emancipation. The colour yellow represents life and the immense energy of the sun. The star is empty because within is the blood or production of workers' struggle. The five points of the star represent the single unity and international representation of the government – each of the five points is representative of the five continents. The hammer and the sickle crossed represent the common struggle and alliance of the industrial working class – the hammer – and the agricultural labourers (farmers and peasants) – the sickle. It became the national emblem of the Soviet Union and later the international symbol of communism.⁶

Each flag and their constituting symbolism aim mainly at disseminating their respective ideologies in a way that individuals do not need to question or think about. In the case of the Brazilian flag, which mostly emphasizes the assumed natural wealth of the country, the slogan 'Order and Progress' explicitly establishes a kind of doctrine Brazilians are supposed to follow in order to reach social development, although it is not clear what it is meant by 'Order' nor 'Progress'. Conversely, the MST flag seems to advertise an ideology which collides with the one put forward by the Brazilian flag. To a large extent, the message conveyed seems to deviate from the 'Order and Progress' motto in that the members of the movement are encouraged to

organize themselves, occupy land, and fight for their objectives, even at the cost of their lives. The presumed violence promoted by the movement is depicted by the man holding up the machete and also by the colour red, a symbol whose origin dates back to the Paris Commune, during which citizens flew red banners as a sign of a labour government.

In a nutshell, this is basically the way the process of representation works. It stands in between the reality and the targeted audience. Representation encapsulates the language-ideology composite and together they set up a complex network of meaningful socio-cognitive discourse in order to persuade the target audience to behave in a pre-established way. In the examples of the flags, the representation was realized mostly through visual discourse, but a similar process takes place when linguistic devices are used with the same intent. In other words, the discourse-representation composite functions in a similar way to that of the language-ideology one, i.e., representation and discourse are the two sides of the same coin. Figure 3.8 illustrates the continuous cyclical interplay involving the language-ideology and the discourse-representation composites in the process of mediating between reality and the audience, as far as news stories are concerned.

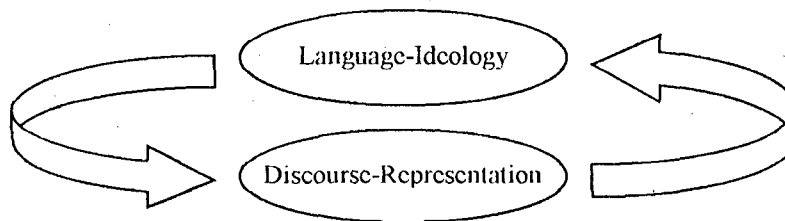


Fig. 3.8 - Relationship between Language-Ideology and Discourse-Representation composites

Consequently, there exists a close relationship between ideology and representation in that both co-occur within the framework proposed above. According to van Dijk (1998, p. 8)

(...) ideologies may be very succinctly defined as *the basis of the social representations shared by members of a group*. This means that ideologies allow people, as group members, to organize the multitude of social beliefs about what is the case, good or bad, right or wrong, *for them*, and to act accordingly.

He also claims that "(...) ideologies and other social representations control discourse structures and vice versa" (van Dijk, 1998, p. 13) and that "(...) ideologies form the 'axiomatic' *basis* of the shared social representations of a group and its members. That is, they are *both mental and social phenomena*." (van Dijk, 1998, p. 126)

In the same way that language-ideology mediates between inner ideas and outer world and vice-versa, for instance, the media, in this case the Press, mediates between the event and the readership through discourse-representation. The discourse-representation composite is a mediator in a process which involves events (the news source) and readership (the ultimate receiver). In between the two, there exists the news story –discourse-representation – which connects events to readership. The news story is in fact a version of an actual event which took place somewhere else at a non-present time and which is brought to us for our consumption. The location of representation is linearly depicted in Figure 3.9 in which a model for the system constituents is offered.

The central elements – Text Production and News Story – constitute the site where discourse-representation mainly occurs in the Press. In order to understand the relevance of the concept of representation it is necessary first of all to bear in mind that all texts are man-made constructs which have specific objectives and are intended

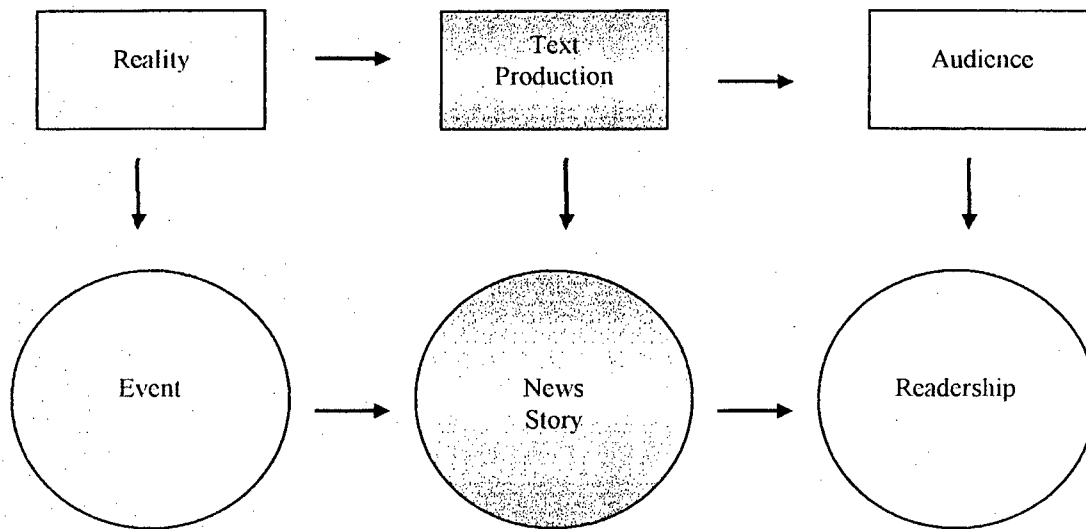


Fig. 3.9 - The place of discourse-representation

to exert some kind of influence so that text consumers are inclined to think and behave in a desired way. Downes and Miller (1998, p. 64) state that

It is vital to keep in mind this relationship between reality and the representation of reality which the mass media offer us. What we, the consumers of media texts, actually see are representations of reality; images which stand in the place of the real things and people in the world, and which we as the audience might take for reality itself. Representations can show us a partial reality or aspects of the real thing which have been selected for the audience by producers.

In order to unveil the intricacies of text production and thus the construction of news stories, the locus of language-ideology and discourse-representation, it is essential to look into the following participants: (1) who constructed the representation, (2) who and/or what is represented, and (3) how people and/or objects are represented. According to Downes and Miller (1998, p. 66)

By looking at who and what is represented and how they are represented, we can analyse how a text has been put together, what implied shared knowledge it relies upon in order for the audience to understand it and what conclusions we, the audience, might draw about what we have seen.

On these grounds, I can state that the text produced does not always represent the reality from which it originated. Nor is the news story a transparent representation of the event on which it was based. That is to say that a news story can be created despite the fact that the event it intends to represent has existed, or not.

In what follows, I carry out an analysis of the representation of the Landless Movement in the Brazilian Press through the tripartite bond between language, ideology, and representation. In this section, I further introduce, explain and exemplify via the analysis of the corpus the way some internal components of the concepts discussed above are at work in Hard News Reports.

3.4 Ideology and Representation: The Building Blocks of Hard News Reports in *Folha de S. Paulo*

In order to account for the application of the socio-cognitive framework proposed by van Dijk (1998) to the analysis of print news discourse and to verify how it can operate in the corpus, I shall concentrate the investigation upon four major concepts which are likely to be employed in the construction of Hard News Reports. In so doing, the analysis may reveal how ideology resides in the language used to construct the news discourse of the Landless Movement and, in turn, how the MST is represented in the Brazilian Press. Although they occur simultaneously in news discourse, the ideological mechanisms are analysed here separately for the sake of convenience.

3.4.1 Polarization

The Hard News Reports in *Folha de S. Paulo* about the agrarian reform in Brazil lay emphasis on the existence of two main parties involved in the dispute for

land, viz., the Landless Movement and the Brazilian Government. Although a number of other people, groups, institutions, etc., appear in the reports, all of them are usually sided with either the Landless Movement or the Brazilian Government and thus fall into one group or the other. Such a categorization establishes the existence of two main ideological parties, namely, one which advocates the “Order and Progress” aphorism and another which defends effective actions in order to reach its objectives, even though such actions are not always in accordance with the principles of social harmony and stability assumed by the other party. In other words, the former – the Brazilian Government – claims to be the Brazilian democratically constituted authority holding responsibility for establishing and maintaining the socio-economic order whereas adherents of the latter – the Landless Movement – are, on the other hand, liable to be identified as aliens in the society mainly because they are regarded as the source of nuisances and chaos.

This relationship is explicitly established by the Brazilian President, Fernando Henrique Cardoso, when he declares that “(...) “não há baderneiro capaz de enfrentar a autoridade de um presidente democraticamente eleito” *Folha de S. Paulo* 2000 [Text 4 - Paragraph 1]. When the President sets up the distinct social roles of ‘the President’ and ‘the troublemaker’, he consolidates the existence of two discrete groups, viz., the group he and his associates belong to – the ‘ingroup’ – and the one constituted by troublemakers and their associates – the ‘outgroup’. This is an example of polarization, one of the manifestations of ideology (van Dijk, 1998, p. 161). That is, socially, individuals are either part of the “Order and Progress” bloc – WE – or against it – THEY. If they are in line with the dominant ideological beliefs they are part of the ingroup, otherwise they share some other kind of ideology and thus are part of the outgroup.

Social practices as polarization, according to van Dijk (1998, p. 160), “(...) are intimately linked to fundamental group ideologies. They involve representations of identity, about who WE are and what THEY are, and especially about what is good for US and what is not good for US.”

Polarization does not always occur so openly. It is sometimes under the veil of a major issue and thus goes unnoticed by the readership. This is the case when the MST social role within society is devalued, whenever it is mentioned, in comparison to that of the ingroup entity. In *Folha de S. Paulo* 1999 [Text 3 - Paragraphs 1-4, 6, 9, and 12], the lexical choice (discussed in more detail in 3.4.4) determines who is who and who does what. The text refers to the ingroup members as ‘agricultores’ and ‘produtores rurais’ and to the outgroup members as ‘MST’ [*passim*]. Both ‘agricultores’ and ‘produtores rurais’ belong to a very specific and relevant social category, i.e., they cultivate the soil for crops while the MST members do not engaged in any specific kind of productive activity. The text does not make it clear what they actually do. They are rather lexically classified and thus represented as an unidentified gathering under the MST acronym. The ‘agricultores’ and the ‘produtores rurais’ have a central role in the developmental chain of the country in that they provide society with essential provisions for living. They are part of the constructive production chain and thus part of the ingroup. Also, references to ‘agricultores’ and ‘produtores rurais’ from the most fertile agricultural areas of the country (Rio Grande do Sul, Santa Catarina, São Paulo, and Mato Grosso do Sul) is recurrent throughout the whole text. Although they demand immediate solution for the lack of financial support, the right to possess land, and the in-debt problems [Paragraph 2], their main complaint concerns the threat of the MST actions. This protest comes particularly from land owners from São Paulo where the Rural Democratic Union is most active. Although

land owners are marching to Brasília in protest against the Brazilian policy towards agriculture, the demonstration seems to be directed almost exclusively towards the MST. The coordinator of the demonstration, Nabhan Garcia, makes it clear that their main objective is to have the guarantee that their land will not be invaded in the future [Paragraph 7]. Not only do they ask for official guarantees that their land should be kept safe from invasions, but also instigate society to reject the MST actions. To do so, a banner which read “First they invade my property, then they will invade your house” [Paragraph 11] was used. Similarly, the process of polarization can also be observed, for instance, in *Folha de S. Paulo* 1999 [Text 1 – Paragraphs 1-7] in which two opposing parties contend – the ‘empresário’ (ingroup) legally demanding for the reinstatement of property and the ‘MST’ (outgroup), as usual, depicted as invading an assumed unproductive farm.

This way, the MST is not an outgroup which simply campaigns for more abstract socialistic ideological principles. It is rather the concrete self-representation of an ideologically action-based movement which aims at taking for THEM what belongs to US. Actually, it is depicted as a danger to the *status quo* of the current ingroup ideological principles.

3.4.2 Expression and Suppression of Information

Another mechanism proposed by van Dijk (1998, p. 267) is the ‘ideological square’ “an overall strategy of ideological communication” whose main function is to highlight or conceal information depending on the interests of the news producer, represented here by the ingroup. The working principle consists of four main moves, as follows:

1. Express/emphasize information that is positive about US.
2. Express/emphasize information that is negative about THEM.
3. Suppress/de-emphasize information that is positive about THEM.
4. Suppress/de-emphasize information that is negative about US.

The 'ideological square', in other words, functions as a kind of representative system whose main aim is to create and disseminate a positive self-representation of the ingroup and a negative other-representation of the outgroup.

For example, in *Folha de S. Paulo* 1999 [Text 1 – Paragraph 7] – “No pedido de reintegração, o empresário alega que o imóvel foi considerado produtivo pelo Inca (Instituto Nacional de Colonização e Reforma Agrária). Ele disse que planta milho e cria na fazenda cerca de 3.000 cabeças de gado com uso “de alta tecnologia” – and in *Folha de S. Paulo* 2000 [Text 4 – Paragraph 7] – “Durante os festejos em Porto Seguro são esperados cerca de 350 jornalistas, boa parte vinda do exterior. Haverá transmissões das comemorações por emissoras de TV de Portugal, Áustria e Chile, além da CNN norte-americana” – the news discourse lays stress on the positive roles played by the ingroup in relation to the Landless Movement. In the first example, the businessman/farmer points out that the invaded farm was considered productive by Inca and also that he plants maize and raises a 3.000 cattle herd using high technology. In the second, the presence of 350 journalists, most foreigners, and the TV transmissions to Portugal, Austria, and Chile, besides the American CNN, highlight the international scope and relevance of the celebration. In both cases, the positive information about the ingroup – WE – is used as a counterpoint to the Landless Movement actions.

On the other hand, it is the negative reputation of the Landless Movement which permeates most of the discourse in these two texts. Unlike the ingroup, the

information provided about the Landless Movement has usually a negative nature. In *Folha de S. Paulo* 1999 [Text 1 – *passim*] the focus is basically on the three farms – Araguari, Sino de Belém, and Santa Maria – invaded by the MST members and in *Folha de S. Paulo* 2000 [Text 4 – *passim*] the centre of attention is the yet-to-come violent actions to be carried out during the celebrations of the Brazilian 500th anniversary. In both cases, plenty of harmful information about the outgroup – THEY – is delivered. In *Folha de S. Paulo* 1999 [Text 1 – *passim*] the MST is said to have invaded productive farms, but it is particularly in *Folha de S. Paulo* 2000 [Text 4 – *passim*] where a great deal of negative information about the outgroup – THEY – can be found. The MST is charged with disseminating a wave of violence and threatening the celebration. The news discourse massively emphasises the existence of ‘troublemakers’ planning fierce demonstrations in order to provoke the death of one of the MST members who would be used as a martyr. It is also emphasised that the MST has deviated from its main objective – agrarian reform – and turned into a group specialized in organizing violent protests. The Brazilian population is said to be sided with US – the ingroup – and against THEM – the outgroup – when a government representative states that the presidential security during the celebrations worries all Brazilians [Text 4 – Paragraph 9]. The president himself also asks both right-wing and left-wing parties to disapprove violent and antidemocratic manifestations and respect the right social layers have to demonstrate pacifically [Text 4 – Paragraph 11]. He later stresses his support in favour of pacific demonstrations, but these should not trespass the limits between democracy and hooliganism [Text 4 – Paragraph 12]. In the two last paragraphs, the emphasis is placed again on the outgroup – the hooligans – which should respect the democratic state and allow for the pacific demonstrations to take place. In other words, information about the outgroup is loaded with

insinuations which place THEM as the source of all problems and in turn the government disclaims responsibility for and involvement in the consequences of the uproars.

Conversely, little, not to say nothing, is mentioned in *Folha de S. Paulo* about the achievements of the Landless Movement. In the corpus analysed, where the MST appears carrying out a constructive activity, this is accomplished with outside help. In *Folha de S. Paulo* 1999 [Text 2 – Paragraphs 1-2], the MST needs the help from a university for qualifying its members to become future leaders. This is the result of a conjoint financial agreement between the MST and the Unicamp for the realization of the first course of this kind. Also in [Text 5 – *passim*], the readership gets to know that the MST depends almost entirely on the public financial support to carry out its pedagogical plans. In other words, funding the MST projects is in fact the whole apparatus of the government represented here by the Incra, the universities, the Ministry of Education, and the National Programme of Education in the Agrarian Reform. Also, as it is made explicit in [Paragraph 6], it is the government which is interested in supporting rural education. Similarly, in *Folha de S. Paulo* 2000 [Text 2 – Paragraph 9] the MST, together with universities, develop a kind of laboratory in which the landless learn how to deal with the soil and have notions of collectiveness. In other words, THEY depend on US. It is the ingroup which provides the means for the outgroup to fulfil its objectives, although it is not clear which objectives they are.

Except for *Folha de S. Paulo* 2000 [Text 5 – *passim*] where a negative evaluation of the government policy towards agrarian reform is mainly reported statistically in terms of the amount of financial resources actually used and the amount released and available for investments in the agrarian reform projects, nowhere else in the corpus the ingroup is subject to explicit criticism. In both *Folha de S. Paulo* 1999

and 2000, the information delivered places the Brazilian Government and the MST in an asymmetrical relation of authority and power. It is always the MST that triggers off violent actions, which, in turn, compels the government to react to them in order to keep social order and stability. It seems that negative information concerning the ingroup in relation to the outgroup is filtered so as to avoid social disapproval by mitigating wrongdoings and in turn supporting and maintaining current policies towards the issue.

Given the analysis above, there occurs a foregrounding discursive process in the corpus which indicates that a discrete amount of negative or positive information about the ingroup and/or the outgroup is strategically used. This becomes thus representative of *Folha de S. Paulo's* attitude towards the way the newspaper represents the relationship between the Brazilian Government and the Landless Movement.

3.4.3 Stereotype

Another mechanism grounded on ideological principles is the one which assumes that a person, a thing, an entity, an event, etc., is believed to be representative in all ways of a specific type. In other words, beliefs, values, knowledge, models, etc., become standardized and fixed as the result of unconsciously formalized and naturalized ideas acquired/learned and recurrently used without thinking or reasoning. In loose terms, this is what stereotype is all about, "(...) an extremely simplified mental model which fails to see individual features, only the values that are believed to be appropriate to the type. This is, of course, a basic ideological process at work" (Fowler, 1991, p. 92). But how to identify the occurrence of an actual stereotyping process in print news discourse? How does news discourse use stereotypes? How are

stereotypes structured for use? In order to answer these questions I refer to the previously discussed relationship between WE (the ingroup) and THEY (the outgroup).

The socio-cognitive nature of stereotypes operates mostly as an invisible mechanism creating paradigms for persons, things, entities, events, etc., and is purposefully produced as images, beliefs, values, knowledges, models, etc. Individuals react to such models by drawing from their background knowledge and without making value judgements in order to find out whether they actually match with their corresponding versions. According to Downes and Miller (1998, p. 82)

Stereotyping is a form of representation which works on actual or assumed commonalities among individuals; news representation of minority or non-mainstream groups often use stereotypes. [emphasis added]

The danger of stereotyping lies in the fact that it refrains individuals from thinking logically and independently and in turn makes them focus their attention upon a pre-established and unjustifiably unchanging mental picture of the target(s) which leads them to react and behave in a predetermined way.

When one thinks of 'empresário' and 'governador' – *Folha de S. Paulo* 1999 [Text 1 – Paragraph 1] – and 'agricultores' and 'produtores rurais' – *Folha de S. Paulo* 1999 [Text 3 – *passim*] it is usually a positive picture of ingroup members which is brought to mind. They are believed to be wealthy and respectable, to hold power, bring benefits to the community, have a higher level of education than the average, etc. They are then depicted as part of the 'Order and Progress' team which is responsible for the development and the socio-economic stability of the country. Moreover, they function as the ideal representation of the highly valued elite stratum which ordinary individuals are expected to respect without challenging. On the other

hand, when the outgroup is portrayed it is usually surrounded by a negative aura. So, expressions such as 'sem-terra' – *Folha de S. Paulo* 1999 [Text 4 – *passim*] – and 'carpinteiros', 'pedreiros', 'metalúrgicos', 'motoristas', 'cozinheiras', 'favelados', 'moradores de rua', 'alcoólatras' – 'todos desempregados' – *Folha de S. Paulo* 2000 [Text 2 – Paragraph 2] – are used in relation to members of the outgroup. The emphasis is placed therefore on the negative connotation of citizens who belong to an assemblage under the head of 'unemployed'. But the effects of the stereotyping process, in this case, is wide-ranging. The unemployed stigma functions as a sort of umbrella term which in turn aggregates other stigmatised stereotypes which are ultimately part of the Landless Movement. According to Downes and Miller (1998, p. 81) "By stereotyping, it is possible to reduce all the individuals to the point where they can be recognised as members of a larger group by the use of an extremely simple set of reference points."

The meaningfully emphasised aspect in the case of the outgroup members is that THEY do not share the same orderly and constructive social principles in theory possessed by the ingroup members. This fact is explicitly pinpointed when the news producer specifically sorts out outgroup members into sub-categories as a way to focus on the characteristics of each particular group in order to highlight their devalued nature. Under the head of 'unemployed', a word which already carries negative socio-economic implications, typically undervalued activities such as 'carpenters', 'bricklayers', 'metallurgists', 'drivers', and 'cooks' are placed at the same level with 'shantytown dwellers', 'homeless', and 'alcoholics', social strata openly regarded as belonging to the lowest positions in the social scale and probably the outsiders concerned with the cause of most political and social unrest.

Consequently, the social disapproving specificities of outgroup members enable the legitimation of the ideology implicitly encoded behind the overt socio-economic propositions of each category. They not only downgrade the social status of the categories, but also construct a marginal picture of the members constituting the 'unemployed' and by extension the Landless Movement. Stereotyping is a powerful representational mechanism used by the Press, though. Downes and Miller (1998, p. 82) claim that

When employing stereotypes, mainstream media producers assume that the audiences' attitudes and values are those of the mainstream. Stereotyping is part of the naturalization of what are offered to us as commonly held attitudes and values.

In this case, *Folha de S. Paulo* does not merely make allusions and insinuations via stereotyping. It ostensibly establishes the roles the ingroup and the outgroup play within the social milieu by implicitly creating an asymmetrical socio-economic relationship between WE and THEY from which the readership is led to react and behave in a pre-determined way. The tendency is in favour of ingroup members as OUR ideal representatives while hostile attitudes of condemnation concerning THEIR social status are likely to unconsciously emerge; a process which does not require readership to think by itself. They are offered the product of a combination of ideological principles via stereotyping whose resultant is a biased representation of a whole system of social classes which are usually consumed unconsciously by the targeted readership. In this regard, Fowler (1991, p. 92) states that

A socially constructed model of the world is projected on to the objects of perception and cognition, so that essentially the things we see and think about are constructed according to a scheme of values, not entities directly perceived.

According to van Dijk (1998, p. 266), the use of ideological based stereotypes brings into prominence two main features. They are relevant because they have an “(...) important semantic function of a topic that organizes the semantic microstructures of a discourse (...)” and a “(...) schematic emphasis in the beginning or on top of a story (often marked by special graphics, such as a banner headline, or by special intonation in conversational dialogue).” But as also pointed out by van Dijk, “obviously, the scope of the newspaper report (...) is vastly greater than that of an everyday story among neighbours.” Within print news reports, stereotyping is a pivotal ideological mechanism which exerts much more influence in moulding recipients’ minds than making them react instantaneously.

The findings in this section are closely related to the question of selection of words/phrases to represent the Landless Movement in *Folha de S. Paulo*, which is the object of analysis in 3.4.4.

3.4.4 Lexical Choice

In the current discussion of the MST representation in the Press, I take the notion of language as a primary system for “modelling experience” (Halliday, 1994, p. 106) whose main aim is not only to allow for communication between individuals, but more imperceptibly to construct a representation of reality. The bits and pieces which constitute the basic requirement for such a process to take place is the lexis, i.e., the stock of words in language.

Even though 3.4.3 dealt with vocabulary in order to explore the application of the concept of stereotyping as a socio-cognitive representational device, the point at stake now concerns mainly the meaning making nature of vocabulary in connection with the immediate context of situation and the broader context of culture. The main

premise in this section then is that lexical choice in print news discourse is a locus of ideological practices through which a person, a thing, an entity, an event, etc., is represented. The relevance of investigating the mechanism of lexical choice and use is endorsed by van Dijk (1998, p. 205) who claims that

Lexical analysis is therefore the most obvious (and still fruitful) component in ideological discourse analysis. Simply spelling out all implications of the words being used in a specific discourse and context often provides a vast array of ideological meanings.

And since “meaning is strictly a social [and cognitive] phenomenon” (Hartley, 1982, p. 26), the investigation of how the Press exploits the intertwined liaison involving ‘lexis’, ‘meaning’ and ‘representation’ is likely to reveal how ideology is structured to work in the print news discourse via words/phrases.

At its very broadest level of operation, words/phrases simply stimulate the readership to draw ideology-laden meanings from its socio-cognitive lexicon networks and background knowledge in order to make the necessary, usually unconscious, connections to construct a biased picture of the MST. In so doing, the Landless Movement tends to be viewed according to the ideological position of each reader, i.e., the lexicogrammatical structures employed by news producers may influence the reading process in that the reader is likely to maintain a position for or against the MST. Fowler (1991, p. 84) asserts that the

(...) categorization by vocabulary is an integral part of the reproduction of ideology in the newspapers, and particularly, that it is the basis of discriminatory practice when dealing with such so-called ‘groups’ of people as women, young people, ‘ethnic minorities’, and do forth (...).

An analysis of Table 1 in Appendix C⁷, which displays the occurrences of key words/phrases openly associated with the Landless Movement in the 1999-2000

Folha de S. Paulo corpus, discloses some of the socio-cognitive ways lexical choice is used to construct the image and thus represent the MST in the telling of news stories.

The verbs listed in Table 1 are recurrent in the corpus and encapsulate the point of view of the newspaper concerning the position of the MST in relation to the issue of land reform and, by extension, the position of the Brazilian society. Far from being neutral in its reporting of factual events, *Folha de S. Paulo* represents *passim* the Landless Movement as an alien which is the origin of endless social nuisances. Unlike the Brazilian Government whose main role portrayed is that of providing solutions for social problems, the MST is depicted as the harmful entity responsible for wrongdoings. The main strategy is to influence and consequently persuade readership of the evil nature of the movement. The MST does not only threaten – ‘ameaçar’ – the ingroup, it actually attacks – ‘atacar’ – as a way to reach its objectives. The most recurrent action however is that of invading – ‘invadir’. This is clearly a negative action which strongly suggests the idea of taking control under arms with the intent of conquering, usually violently. Following from this, the movement occupies – ‘ocupar’ – the subdued farm(s) as a way to establish, even illegally, its domains. Although these actions sound as a method to protest – ‘protestar’ – against the government’s policies towards agrarian reform and as a way to demand – ‘reivindicar’ – urgent and fair land distribution, the Landless Movement is portrayed as a brutal and criminal organization when emphasis is given to the fact that it radicalises – ‘radicalizar’ – its position and sacks – ‘saquear’ – and lays private properties to waste – ‘depredar’ –, burns – ‘queimar’ – plantations, blocks – ‘interditar’ – streets, and takes – ‘tomar’ – for them what belongs to others. Civil disobedience is highlighted when MST members provoke – ‘provocar’ – and treat disrespectfully – ‘desacatar’ – the legal authority, generally the police, in charge of

expelling – ‘despejar’ – the invaders. Consequently, usually the leader is then arrested – ‘deter’ – in order for a trial to be conducted. The mischievous nature of the MST is again the focal point when the newspaper suggests that one of the strategies of the Landless Movement to enlarge the number of its members is to enlist – ‘recrutar’ – individuals, usually unemployed, from other activities other than the agricultural one, to militate against the government’s plans and to take part in the action-based demonstrations. Conversely, the MST members are also described as people who ramble – ‘perambular’ – or go in processions – ‘peregrinar’ – with no destination. In this case, far from being orderly and productive citizens, its members are described as outsiders who are dependent economically on the ingroup income to survive. They are in fact a problem the ingroup has to deal with.

The discussion above is just an example of the way language can be used by news discourse to maintain the ideological practices of the dominant class and to legitimise the social gap between the ingroup (WE are good, right, harmless, etc.) and the outgroup (THEY are bad, wrong, dangerous, etc.) by placing emphasis on the evil nature of the movement via de use of key words with negative connotations. In other words, the MST is represented through the news discourse as a proscribed organization which advocates illegal actions to sustain its ideologies and achieve its objectives, clearly against the ‘Order and Progress’ position of the government.

The image and the objectives of the Landless Movement are downgraded when *Folha de S. Paulo* 1999 [Text 6 – *passim*] aligns the MST with well-known international guerrilla groups such as Farc (The Colombian Revolutionary Armed Force), EZLN (The National Zapatist Liberation Army), and Black Panthers (North American Group accused of terrorism during the 70s). By the same token, other minority groups such as Indians (from Canada and Argentina), homosexuals, punks,

anarchists, unions, women, European and African groups, are all regarded to share the same anti-democratic ideological principles. In fact, they are all considered to be part of the same “balaio de gatos” (*Folha de S. Paulo*, 1999 [Text 6 – Paragraph 1]), i.e., an ideologically loaded expression meaning a chaotic assemblage of people usually without common purpose and hungry for causing disturbances (see Houaiss and Villar, 2001, p. 382).

Even when the Landless Movement is placed in a disadvantaged position in relation to the other social stratum as a consequence of the government’s neglected duties concerning agrarian reform (see *Folha de S. Paulo* 2000 [Text 5 – *passim*]), the news discourse represents the MST as a burden to society. The main focus of attention is drawn towards the miserable life its members live when they become owners of their own lands. A life which resembles the early encampments set up after an invasion. The majority still live in tents covered with sheets of plastic where whole families reside, depending on donations for food, without clean water, or any electrical grid. Their standard of living, which is expected to be a prosperous one once they have the titles of the unproductive farms to work on and turn them into productive areas, is compared to that of shantytown dwellers where misery is all around. When the MST is said to be doing something in favour of its members, the real values of its actions are masked by the foregrounding role the Brazilian Government plays for it to happen. In *Folha de S. Paulo* 1999 [Text 5 – *passim*], the pedagogic project is financially supported mainly by the Brazilian official agencies such as MEC (Ministry of Education and Culture), Programa Nacional de Educação na Reforma Agrária (National Educational Program for the Agrarian Reform), Incra (The National Agency for Agrarian Reform), and the Federal Universities. These official institutions financially and intellectually assist the MST in running courses to

disseminate the MST's transformational pedagogy which aims at educating the 'sem-terrinhas' to construct a humane society. In other words, the MST is unable to do without public fund support and is thus depicted as a dependent organization.

Folha de S. Paulo 1999 [Text 5 and Text 6] also reveals that the principle 'THEY have an ideology, WE do not' is at play in the news discourse. There are in fact two types of ideologies; one which is not explicitly verbalized but is embedded in the news discourse (the ingroup ideology) and the one which is made explicit as belonging to the Landless Movement (the outgroup ideology). In [Text 5 – Paragraphs 2, 7, and 17 in the subsection entitled Ideologia], the focus is upon the 'transformational pedagogy' which is claimed to be a pedagogy without any trace of ideology – “ensino de transformação para uma sociedade humanitária” (em vez de ensino ideológico).” This is further emphasized when the Incra representative in Rio Grande do Sul, Maria Helena Córbeline, states that the proposal of the transformational pedagogy is not ideologised – “A proposta não é ideologizada (...)” – and Roseli Salete Caldart, a then doctoral candidate at Universidade Federal do Rio Grande do Sul, claims that in spite of the nature of the discourse, there is no interest in ideological teaching principles – “Apesar do discurso, ela nega o interesse em um ensino ideológico”. The 'transformational pedagogy' project is proposed in opposition to the 'pedagogy of the oppressed' forwarded by Paulo Freire (1970) and considered to be loaded with left-wing ideology.

Another relevant aspect directly related to lexical choice has to do with the selection of words/phrases to be inserted between quotation marks, a widely used procedure employed by news producers in order to achieve “impartiality” while constructing news stories. Benites (1996, p. 29-32) points out the existence of six main types of quotations. The 'epigraph quotation' aims at directing the reading

process towards a specific direction and also at contextualizing the news story; the 'cultural quotation' incorporates in the news text popular sayings which are of public domain; the 'authoritative quotation' is the account of an expert or specialist in a particular issue which is used to support the news text; the 'ironic quotation' aims at highlighting part of a text as a way to point out, usually sarcastically, the author's/institution's divergence from what is being reported; the 'detachment quotation' utilizes other texts to ensure the objectivity and the neutrality of the news story producer; and the 'fidelity quotation' aims at giving credibility and authenticity to the print news discourse. These, according to Benites (1996, p. 33), can be subdivided into two main groups. The first group is made up of the 'epigraph quotation', the 'cultural quotation', and the 'authoritative quotation' which are typically characterized by a merging of the voices of the news text producer and that of the person quoted. The second group consists of the 'ironic quotation', the 'detachment quotation', and the 'fidelity quotation', and its main feature concerns the disengagement between the news text producer and the main source of quotation.

An analysis of the 1999-2000 *Folha de S. Paulo* corpus reveals that words and phrases are strategically selected to make meanings and influence the readership towards a specific direction. Most of them fall within the second group and aim mainly at giving authenticity to the news discourse without taking the responsibility for what is being reported and, whenever applicable, ironizing the source quoted.

Instances of detachment and fidelity quotations can be found in the corpus. In *Folha de S. Paulo* 1999 [Text 1 – Paragraph 2] the news producer lays emphasis on what the MST interviewee claimed to be the reason why the movement invaded the farm, i.e., it was absolutely abandoned and unproductive – 'absolutamente abandonado e improdutivo'. This statement is contradicted by Incra, the official office

in charge of evaluating farms for agrarian reform, and also by the owner who argues that he plants maize and has a cattle of 3.000 which is raised with the help of high technology [Paragraph 7]. In [Text 2 – *passim*] the news producer directly quotes the source as a means to forefront the actual words uttered by the interviewees. In [Paragraphs 6-11], João Pedro Stedile has his speech directly reported because he gives “his version”, probably not coinciding with the official one, of the history of agrarian reform and in [Paragraph 13] students demonstrated their disagreement with the government’s policies by saying “Fora já! Fora já! O FHC e o FMI” which seems not to be a view shared by the newspaper. In [Text 3 – Paragraph 7] Nabhan Garcia, from UDR, who demands official guarantees against invasions, has his actual words precisely reproduced – “garantia de que as terras não vão ser invadidas” – and later in [Paragraph 11] the UDR alerts the population through a banner that the MST may also invade everyone’s houses – “Primeiro invadem minha terra, depois invadirão sua casa”. In [Text 5 – Paragraphs 1, 2, 3, and 8] ironic, detachment, and fidelity quotations merge. The emphasis on the MST pedagogic proposal is reported in its own words and is both detached from the newspaper’s and the government’s views of what education is about. The latter in fact makes it explicit that while supporting rural education, it intends to qualify the education of children and adolescents [Paragraph 6], but it does not say how. These paragraphs are thus constructed taking into account only the MST view of education which is foregrounded by the selection of key structures to be quoted. In *Folha de S. Paulo* 2000 [Text 1 – Paragraph 5], the radical position of the MST is plain to see when Jaime Amorim, the local MST leader, is directly reported to have said that they release the road only and if only the Inbra negotiates with them – “Só vamos sair daqui quando o Inbra aceitar negociar com a gente”. In [Paragraph 8] both the voice of the MST and the voice of the police can be

heard. The two reports are contradictory because the MST leader claims that they did nothing and that they reacted because they were provoked – “Não fizemos nada, só reagimos porque fomos provocados”. On the other hand, the police maintains that the policemen did not react to the MST provocation and thus they did nothing – “A prova de que a PM nada fez é que nossos homens não reagiram”. In both examples the MST is represented as the party responsible for the wrongdoing. Along the same lines, in [Text 3 – Paragraphs 5 and 7] prominence is attached to what José Rainha Júnior said. As an MST leader, his extremist discourse asserts that the families do not intend to leave the invaded farm – “não pretendem sair” – [Paragraph 5] and that the conflict between UDR and MST is announced and there is no way out because the farmers are armed – “O conflito está anunciado, não tem conversa. Os fazendeiros estão armadas” – [Paragraph 7]. Similarly, in [Text 6 – Paragraph 6], the actual words by Jaime Amorim, an MST leader, echoes the movement’s alleged aggressive nature when he says that it is high time the members of the movement held up their heads and became soldiers. They do not intend to fight to die, neither do they intend to give up in fear of losing – “Agora é hora de erguer a cabeça e virar soldados. Não vamos lutar para perder ou morrer, mas também não vamos deixar de lutar por medo de perder”. The quotation explicitly avows the way MST members are psychologically incited to behave and act according to the movement commandments.

The Landless Movement claims for an equalitarian society in which all citizens should have the same rights to its commodities and facilities. In [Text 2 – Paragraph 4], however, the MST seems not to follow this basic tenet in that it privileges those who are potential leaders – “líderes em potencial” – when these are selected to take a course without following a criterion for the selection which shows a total disregard for the other MST members. Also in [Paragraph 16], the MST declares

that in urban centers the youth become marginalized – os jovens “acabam se marginalizando”. The quoting is ironic because, according to the government, the movement is responsible for violent situations for it has become an organized demonstration group and its actions deviate from the democratic legality (*Folha de S. Paulo* 2000 [Text 4 – *passim*]). In other words, it is within the Landless Movement where the youth become marginalized, not in urban centers. In [Text 6 – Paragraphs 1, 10, and 16] there also occur instances of ironic discourse. In [Paragraph 1], the organizations taking part in the Second American Meeting for Human Policies and against Neo-Liberalism are regarded as having the same ideological nature and principles and are said to be part of the same “balaio de gatos”. In [Paragraph 10], the most outstanding groups in the meeting are labelled stars – “estrelas” –, a direct sarcastic reference to famous and brilliant people who perform the principal or most prominent roles in a film or play, for instance. Highlighting a pessimistic description of the EZLN (The National Zapatist Liberation Army) in which emphasis is given to the EZLN as a group which attacks the Mexican army, invades cities in the poorest corners of the country, kills hundreds of people, and has an unstable relationship with the Mexican government in spite of a ceasefire treat, the motto earth and liberty – “terra e liberdade” – in [Paragraph 16] is at least contradictory. In *Folha de S. Paulo* 2000 [Text 2 – Paragraph 3], the MST is compared to an army made up of landless from urban areas – “exército de sem-terra urbano” – which walks around without any destination. In [Paragraph 8], the focus is upon the ex-busdriver Gilberto Fabiano who did not know how to use the simplest equipment to plant – “não sabia como pegar numa enxada” – when he joined the MST. In other words, he was not originally a landless; he became one. In [Text 5 – Paragraph 6] there occurs an ironic interplay between “sem-terra” and “com-terra”, literally without land and with land,

respectively. The landless fight for the right to have land of their own implies that once they receive their titles they are no longer landless and their standard of living, in theory, is likely to improve. The focus here is on the contradiction that even possessing their own land they still behave like the landless. The same rationale can be applied to [Paragraph 17] where the word ‘owner’ appears between quotation marks – “Dona”. Although Maria Aparecida de Lima possesses a stretch of land of her own from which she is expected to cultivate subsistence crops, she feels happy when her children go to school because sometimes she does not even have rice at home [Paragraph 18].

Instances of authoritative quotations are also used as a way to represent the Landless Movement. For instance, in *Folha de S. Paulo* 1999 [Text 5 – Paragraphs 12, 13, 15-17, and 19] the voice of two experts are heard; both in the field of education studies – Dr. Roseli Salette Caldart and the Post-Graduation Professor Mario Sérgio Cortella from PUC-SP and late Secretary of Education in the State of São Paulo. Their titles and expertise are used here to give credibility to what is being reported. The former defending and supporting the educational project proposed by the MST and the latter, although speaking in favour of the project, disagreeing with some aspects which are limited in scope. There arises therefore a speculative question of whether the project is *de facto* applicable. This drawing on specialists to corroborate what is in the news also works in the opposite direction. Likewise, in *Folha de S. Paulo* 2000 [Text 4 – Paragraphs 8, 9, and 10] it is the presidential spokesperson, Georges Lamazière, and the Minister-in-Chief of the Institutional Security, Alberto Cardoso, who legitimize the authority of the president and uphold the moral order of things. On the other side, it is the MST which is depicted as the cause of anarchy and chaos in society. In the examples analysed above neither the

news producer nor the newspaper is openly accredited with the reports, i.e., authenticity is kept but none of them assumes full responsibility for the contents of what was actually stated.

When quotations are used, it is possible to observe the employment of another mechanism to represent the Landless Movement. In *Folha de S. Paulo* 1999 [Text 1 – Paragraph 2], there occurs an instance of a misleading quotation. According to the text, Altamiro Stochero, from MST, said that the invasion was not on purpose. As such, the indirect quotation would report that the MST did not have the intention to invade the farm – “a invasão da fazenda de Oliveira não foi proposital”. It should be noted, however, that the only word enclosed in quotation marks is “proposital” and not the whole structure “não foi proposital”. This seems to be a way to foreground the negative connotation of “proposital” in this specific context of situation, i.e., whenever the MST invades a farm it is always “on purpose”. Ironically, the news discourse reports an action which is not typical of the MST. The news producer then uses the voice of the original source against itself as a way to discredit and ridicule the movement and by extension to cause an impact on the readership.

Although it is openly claimed that the media, particularly the Press, aim at reporting factual events objectively and impartially, the analysis above brings to light the fact that there does not exist a news text which is totally free from its producer’s viewpoint(s). By simply selecting a word/phrase to be inserted within quotation marks, the text producer is exercising the partiality which is typical of the ideological inherent nature of human beings, be it due to the social institution the text producer is a representative of or his/her own, usually unconscious, ideological principles. Thus, far from being a means to neutrally publicise events without influencing its

readership, the Press *does* lay emphasis on aspects which seem to serve the interests of the mainstream dominant elite.

As we have seen above, there does not exist an individual, a group, an organization, a society, a nation etc., without ideology, be they part of the dominant or dominated group. In a way, ideology is just like the air we breathe. It is invisible, colourless, tasteless, odourless, transparent, it is found everywhere and necessary to the existence of all forms of life, i.e., we depend on it in such a way that we can not survive without it. In other words, while the air we breathe is essential to our lives, the socio-cognitive nature of ideology is one of the most unconscious and innermost mechanisms which allow us to have good reasons for living.

3.5 Ideology and Representation: Looking into the Landless Movement Representation from a Foreign Perspective in *The Guardian/The Observer*

While drawing on the concepts already introduced, discussed, and applied in previous subsections, I now carry out a cross-cultural analysis of the representation of the Landless Movement in the Press. To do so, I investigate how *The Guardian/The Observer* depicts the MST in relation to *Folha de S. Paulo*.

In *The Guardian/The Observer* a striking feature is the amount of information provided and the more detailed accounts of the issues reported in its Hard News Reports. This may be in part explained by the space allocated in the newspaper for each section and the length of noteworthy news stories (see Table 1 in Appendix D).

3.5.1 Polarization

As in *Folha de S. Paulo*, polarization is also a feature in the 1999-2000 *The Guardian/The Observer* corpus. The newspaper makes clear the existence of two

main contending parties, viz., the Brazilian Government and the Landless Movement, and the way they are related is similar to that in *Folha de S. Paulo*. On the one hand, the Brazilian Government maintains that land is being distributed in a larger scale than it has ever been before – “Since Mr Cardoso took power in 1994, his administration has given land titles to more than 250,000 families, more than were granted by his predecessors in the previous 30 years.” On the other, the Landless Movement sustains that the government is not actually executing its agrarian reform policy in full – “(...) the MST says he is distributing too little, too slowly and then refusing to give financial help to make the land productive” (*The Guardian/The Observer* 2000 [Text 6 – Paragraph 11]). In other words, the Hard News Reports in *The Guardian/The Observer* also underlines the existence of a clear-cut division between two groups of opposing ideological opinions. The difference between *The Guardian/The Observer* and *Folha de S. Paulo* lies in the way the Brazilian Government and the Landless Movement are represented in the news stories.

Although considered a highly aggressive action movement – “The violence has also provoked opposition from traditional allies on the left who question the movement's drastic actions (...)” (*The Guardian/The Observer* 2000 [Text 6 – Paragraph 14]) – it is the Brazilian Government and its associates, the ingroup members, who are depicted as responsible for most violence involving the landed and the landless. The violence used by the police which resulted in the 1996 massacre of nineteen peasants is an example of the procedures used by the ingroup to preserve its *status quo*. Such violence is publicized in *The Guardian/The Observer* 1999 [Text 5 – Paragraph 2] by “(...) exposing to a world audience the country's social inequalities and the violence used to maintain them.” In order to stop huge nationwide demonstrations by the MST, the government takes tough measures such as the

creation of a new police force to combat the landless mobilisations so as to ensure social order. In a sense, this attitude towards the problem sounds as though war was declared in that “The Brazilian countryside is a powder keg right now. The conflict is going to be tougher than ever in the coming months and it is only a matter of time before there is more violence” (*The Guardian/The Observer* 2000 [Text 6 – Paragraph 8]). Violence also comes straight from landowners when they decide to take the law into their own hands so that “It is common for occupations to end in violent expulsions and many people have lost their lives in the struggle” (*The Guardian/The Observer* 1999 [Text 1 – Paragraph 7]). Violence also comes from the Brazilian judicial system when senior military policemen are acquitted “(...) despite the jury's belief that the men were responsible for one of the most violent episodes in the country's recent history” (*The Guardian/The Observer* 1999 [Text 6 – Paragraph 1]), namely, the death of nineteen peasants. In spite of attributing the origin of the violence mainly to the socio-economic inequalities resulted from the ingroup unfair social policies, the actions of the Landless Movement are also charged with responsibility for the violence. Occupying and squatting on assumed unproductive land is an MST practice “– which often resulted in violent conflict with landowners –” (*The Guardian/The Observer* 2000 [Text 3 – Paragraph 6]). Moreover, the MST is also accused of murder as a result of its radical occupying actions – “Often landlords use violence to stop them, though the landless movement too has been accused of some killings” (*The Guardian/The Observer* 2000 [Text 2 – Paragraph 7]).

In a way, the Landless Movement as represented in the *The Guardian/The Observer*, unlike in *Folha de S. Paulo*, is considered to share, with the Brazilian Government, a part of the responsibility for the violence in the struggle for land reform. Both have their own ideological principles, but no instance can be found in

The Guardian/The Observer in which the MST threatens the order of the democratic state of the Brazilian society. Neither can any example be found stating that the action-based movement intends to take for THEM what is not guaranteed by the Brazilian constitution, i.e., occupying and squatting is a legal action because there is "(...) a constitutional law that asserts that unproductive land must be handed over to the people living on it" (*The Guardian/The Observer* 1999 [Text 4 – Paragraph 7]). The threatening nature of the Landless Movement so strongly publicised in *Folha de S. Paulo* and which constructs a negative representation of the MST's identity is not central in *The Guardian/The Observer* Hard News Reports. Also secondary is the contending images of the ingroup and the outgroup and the effort to maximize the law-abiding doings of the former and the wrongdoings of the latter. The question of what is good for US and what is not good for US is replaced by how life can improve and social justice be done if land reform is seriously carried out. In other words, the fierce quarrels and violent disputes between the ingroup and the outgroup take a second place in favour of more detailed accounts of the issues in question – the agrarian reform.

In a nutshell, instead of placing copious emphasis on the roles members of the ingroup and the outgroup play in relation to the dispute for land, attention is mainly focused upon the Brazilian agrarian reform itself and its implications for the life improvement of rural workers and by extension for the Brazilian society as a whole.

3.5.2 Expression and Suppression of Information

Unlike *Folha de S. Paulo*, in which negative information about the outgroup is emphasized while negative information about the ingroup is suppressed, *The Guardian/The Observer* places emphasis on the social consequences of the conflict

and provides more detailed information about the Landless Movement which does not appear in *Folha de S. Paulo*.

The Landless Movement is publicised as “(...) the biggest direct action land-reform group in Latin America” (*The Guardian/The Observer* 1999 [Text 1 – Paragraph 1]), “(...) the largest direct action movement in Latin America” ([Text 4 – Paragraph 6]), “(...) one of the largest and most effective grassroots movements in the world, responsible for securing land title for about a million peasants” ([Text 5 – Paragraph 4]), “(...) Latin America's largest popular movement” (*The Guardian/The Observer* 2000 [Text 2 – Paragraph 4]), “(...) a radical organisation representing several million poor Brazilians that fights for social justice (...)” ([Text 3 – Paragraph 2]), the movement that “(...) has revolutionised land reform in Brazil (...)” ([Text 3 – Paragraph 5]), “(...) became one of South America's most important social movements, helping to redress the balance of land distribution in the continent's largest country (...)” ([Text 6 – Paragraph 5]), and later “(...) became an international cause celebre and the largest social movement in Latin America” ([Text 3 – Paragraph 6]). Differently from *Folha de S. Paulo*, where the MST is represented as an unlawful and riotous assembly of troublemakers (see 3.4.1), *The Guardian/The Observer* discloses the positive side of the movement not only within Brazil and South America, but also in the broader worldwide context. In other words, the MST is a social movement which is recognized as legitimate and that, in spite of its extremist actions to reach its objectives, fights for a cause célèbre that is legitimized within the unfair Brazilian system of land distribution.

This is in fact another aspect of the issue which is suppressed in *Folha de S. Paulo*, i.e., too much unproductive land in the hands of too little people. This inequitable land allocation dates back to “(...) the colonial era when the Portuguese

crown handed over vast tracts to 14 'captains' in 1534. Today, 1% of all land holdings still cover 45% of the country" (*The Guardian/The Observer* 1999 [Text 4 – Paragraph 9]) and today "More than 50% of Brazil's arable land is owned by 2% of the 160m population" ([Text 5 – Paragraph 14]) that is why peasant families protest "(...) against the unfair distribution of land in Latin America's largest country (...)", [Text 5 – Paragraph 2]), i.e., "Brazil has one of the world's least equitable distributions of wealth" (*The Guardian/The Observer* 2000 [Text 1 – Paragraph 22]). The problem is also contextualized internationally when it is reported that "The richest 20% of the people hold 90% of the land, while the poorest 40% own just 1% - the unfairest ratio in the world" (*The Guardian/The Observer* 2000 [Text 4 – Paragraph 4] see also [Text 5 – Paragraph 9]), this brings the conflict and the movement into a global scope exposing this way the real socio-economic nature of the problem and the role the Landless Movement plays as a non-governmental socio-political organization which aims at changing the lives of rural workers and by extension reducing the exodus from the countryside towards urban areas. (cf. Chapter 1, 1.2).

From productive of great annoyance in *Folha de S. Paulo* to "(...) a model of self-empowerment that promises real change to the lives of working people" (*The Guardian/The Observer* 1999 [Text 1 – Paragraph 8]), the MST emerges in *The Guardian/The Observer* as an action movement which is potentially able to turn unproductive land into productive soil when its members are settled and 'capitalist' investments are properly employed in a 'radical communist' movement. An example is the Canoal agricultural cooperative which "(...) has an annual turnover of £8m, sells its products to food multinational Parmalat, and has transformed its inhabitants from dispossessed people on the fringes of society to moderately prosperous farmers" (*The*

Guardian/The Observer 1999 [Text 4 – Paragraph 4]). Similarly, Novo Sarandi also prospered after the settlement of the landless. – “The year after the first seeds were planted Novo Sarandi was already selling to local markets” ([Text 4 – Paragraph 14]). Moreover, technology is also a resource which is used by MST ex-squatters. Farmers at Promissão are employing environmental friendly technology so that “(...) all MST farms are making for being completely organic by 2002” ([Text 1 – Paragraph 10]). On a recent visit to an MST settlement, Ricky Ross, a Christian Aid representative, reports that “Permanent housing, schools and health centres are all part of the settlement where we stayed. The fields surrounding it are full of corn, coffee, sugar, rice and between the houses are shady groves of mango trees. Bananas, pineapple, peppers and tomatoes are also produced in large numbers and the dairy produce is supplied by their own cattle herds.” He also compares the life in the settlement with the life in urban areas and finds striking differences. – “Compare this picture with the life of the slum dwellers of Sao Paulo who are without money for rent and no certainty of steady employment. MST offers a model of self-empowerment that promises real change to the lives of working people” ([Text 1 – Paragraph 8]). But the productive labour goes beyond the year’s good crop and the financial return of the investments. Individuals become citizens and recover their self-esteem not only as social beings, but particularly as human beings. – “In Novo Sarandi the greatest benefit to the inhabitants goes deeper than the material dividends of working their own land in security. The people feel they have gained dignity after lives on the margins of society” [Text 4 – Paragraph 20]).

Likewise, education is another achievement of the Landless Movement which receives attention in *The Guardian/The Observer* but, when not ignored at all in *Folha de S. Paulo*, it is approached in a biased way and said to be ideological by nature. The

question is that the educational programme proposed by the MST diverges from the one proposed by the Brazilian Government. Whereas the official Brazilian system of education imposes pedagogical programmes which "(...) prepare people for exams" (*The Guardian/The Observer* 2000 [Text 1 – Paragraph 16]), the MST educational proposal is open for the participation of the community and thus "A communitarian, anti-big business ideology pervades the teaching. Children are taught from an early age, for example, that farming practices that involve toxic chemicals are bad" ([Text 1 – Paragraph 17]). In other words, besides occupying and squatting on unproductive land, the MST "(...) has also made huge strides in educating the rural poor" ([Text 1 – Paragraph 9]) and the movement considers education as vital as land reform – "Agrarian reform is not just about land. Education is just as important. With one comes the other," says Elfi Fenske, of the MST's national directorate on education. "School is a minimum right for every citizen. Access to knowledge is vital for the people's development" [Text 1 – Paragraph 10]). Following this philosophy, the Landless Movement "(...) has set up 1,800 schools in its 2,600 settlements, attended by 110,000 pupils." In the Ireno Alves settlement, "(...) Brazil's largest MST community and a model for the movement" ([Text 1 – Paragraph 11]), "(...) every child attends one of its 11 schools - well above the national average of 90%. It is a small triumph against adversity. The school buildings were built by pupils, teachers and parents with wooden planks and gumption" ([Text 1 – Paragraph 12]). Although a number of problems in relation to education of MST farmers still remain (see [Text 1 – Paragraphs 13, 21, and 22]), the movement invests in a much ambitious project viz., that of creating a new society via a cultural revolution. ([Text 3 – Paragraph 9]). The idea is to change the image of the movement whose primary objective was to organize mass occupations and squat on unproductive farms until the government concedes

rights. The cultural revolution started with the active participation of Don Baron Cohen who was first “(...) involved in creating a play with the MST” ([Text 3 – Paragraph 14]) and later “(...) organised a piece of MST art - a huge sculpture of 19 burned-out trees on a site where 19 landless peasants were murdered. The sculpture was built by 500 members of the victims' community” ([Text 3 – Paragraph 10]). He also coordinated the construction of “(...) six monuments for the alternative anniversary of Brazil (...)” and also trained “500 "cultural activists"”. ([Text 3 – Paragraph 11]). His experience in dealing with the Landless Movement proposal as a socio-political action-based organization and its care for cultural and educational activities led him to conclude that “I have not encountered any movement in the world that has the same vision of community-based development and participatory democracy as the MST” ([Text 3 – Paragraph 16]).

The main difference between the two mainstream newspapers lies in the fact that although the main focal point of the news discourse in both *Folha de S. Paulo* and *The Guardian/The Observer* is the Landless Movement and agrarian reform, in *Folha de S. Paulo* much more emphasis is given to positive information concerning the ingroup whereas the positive information about the outgroup is suppressed. What is largely stressed in *Folha de S. Paulo* is an assumed negative image of the movement which represents the MST as a good-for-nothing organization, except to bring about chaos and disorder, whereas in *The Guardian/The Observer* the constructive socio-political approach to deep-rooted Brazilian problems such as land distribution and education is largely discussed and the affirmative role the movement plays to solve these problems is brought into special prominence.

3.5.3 Stereotype

The process of representation via stereotyping does not occur in *The Guardian/The Observer* in the same way and with the same intensity as it does in *Folha de S. Paulo* in which, most of the times, the Landless Movement and/or its members are aligned with what the ingroup considers illegal national and international practices and/or groups. In other words, the MST is represented in the news discourse of *Folha de S. Paulo* as a proscribed movement as the result of a series of strategies used by news producers to create in the mind of its readership a dark image of the movement. (see 3.4.3 and 3.4.4).

In *The Guardian/The Observer*, the Landless Movement status changes. Its socio-economic position and importance within the Brazilian and the international scenario gains prominence in that the MST is not considered to be simply an assemblage of troublemakers, but a social well-organized mass movement guided by high principles. The Landless Movement, together with academics from Belgium, Switzerland, Egypt and the Lebanon, French lobbies representing the unemployed and homeless, the French trade union federation (the CGT), an organisation representing peasant farmers from 10 West African nations, and economists from South Korea, El Salvador and South Africa (*The Guardian/The Observer* 2000 [Text 2 – Paragraph 2]) are all members of Alternative Davos, an alternative economic forum which discusses and proposes alternative solutions to current worldwide socio-economic problems. As a member of a group which proposes a ‘new social contract’, the MST voices to the world its unheard opinions concerning the Brazilian Government policies towards the main deep-seated social problems – “(...) the immediate impact of the IMF in Brazil had been a cut in social budgets and in investment in roads and schools. 'Under their guidance, 80 per cent of our industries have been privatised, the owners are non-

Brazilians and their profit is exported.” ([Text 2 – Paragraph 9]). And concerning specifically land reform, Mario Lill, from MST, says that “(...) 200,000 families had been given land last year but that in the same period, the Brazilian government had taken land from 400,000 families” ([Text 2 – Paragraph 10]). The World Economic Forum is also criticised by Mario Lill who describes the World Trade Organization as being “for the submission of the poor of the world” and the achievements of the movement also have a chance to be publicised in spite of the unfair policies for land distribution – “In Brazil, he said, neo-liberalism had strengthened big landowners, but MST had now spread into 23 of 25 states, and had become a family movement, teaching literacy, opening 1,500 schools, working with various universities, opening pharmacies, training nurses, using alternative technology in agriculture. ([Text 3 – Paragraph 7]).

Rather than being an ideological “balaio-de-gatos”, the meeting of so many world organizations – academics, French trade union federation (CGT), representatives of peasant farmers from ten West African nations, economists from South Korea, El Salvador and South Africa, Fenop – places emphasis on the devastating social consequences of the current policies of the world’s political and economic powers. Unlike in *Folha de S. Paulo*, where the Landless Movement members are explicitly downgraded to the level of outgroups like ‘shantytown dwellers’, ‘homeless’, ‘alcoholics’, ‘homosexuals’, ‘punks’, ‘anarchists’, ‘unions’, and ‘troublemakers’ and are lined up with illegal movements such as Farc (The Colombian Revolutionary Armed Force), EZLN (The National Zapatist Liberation Army), and Black Panthers (American Group accused of terrorism during the 70s), in *The Guardian/The Observer* the MST has another status. The Landless Movement is represented as a discrete organization which has its own characteristics and follows its

philosophical principles. As an outgroup, it shares features and guidelines with similar movements from all over the world and is widely recognized by its accomplishments. In other words, *The Guardian/The Observer* readership is likely to recognize the MST not as a stereotypical construction which conforms to a model created by news producers and publicised via the news discourse. The role played by the movement is so significant for the improvement of human relations that, to a large extent, it cannot be represented by a condensed set of simple reference features. It does not belong in the ingroup nor is it part of the outgroup, but shares features of them both. The MST is represented as a movement that heads for the commodities and facilities shared by ingroup members without losing its origins and preserving its socialistic community-based roots. Therefore, it is hard to state that the Landless Movement is stereotypically depicted in *The Guardian/The Observer* in that this newspaper provides a thoughtful approach to the question of agrarian reform in Brazil.

3.5.4 Lexical Choice

There does not exist a text written in plain words. Thus, one of the intrinsic features of news texts is that they are open to different interpretations depending on the immediate context of situation and the broader context of culture as well as on the readership background knowledge which also influences the way the news discourse is interpreted. But since ideology is linguistically mediated, it is possible to pinpoint the means through which reality is represented, particularly if the focus of analysis is the utilization of words/phrases by news producers in order to provide a socio-cognitive representation of a person, a thing, an entity, an event, etc.

The analysis of the lexis occurring in *The Guardian/The Observer* compared with that in *Folha de S. Paulo* is likely to reveal how social practices are ideologically invested through language via the myriad of ways a meaning can be worded.

The use of two key verbs – *invadir/to invade* and *ocupar/to occupy* – deserve special attention. The number of occurrences of these two verbs, and their derivational forms, in the *Folha de S. Paulo* and *The Guardian/The Observer* corpus already reveals some implications of lexical choice in the construction of a news story (see Table 3.1).

	<i>Folha de S. Paulo</i>	<i>The Guardian/The Observer</i>
<i>invadir / to invade</i>	42	13
<i>ocupar / to occupy</i>	02	16
Totals	44	29

Table 3.1 - Occurrences of *invadir/to invade* and *ocupar/to occupy* in *Folha de S. Paulo* and *The Guardian/The Observer* Corpus

It is not difficult to conclude that *Folha de S. Paulo* favours the use of *invadir/to invade* while *The Guardian/The Observer* prefers *ocupar/to occupy*, although in the last case the difference is minimal. The quantitative analysis, however, provides just a vague and blurred picture of the role lexical choices play though it is already an indication that the reason(s) why *Folha de S. Paulo* prefers one form rather than the other is meaningful and is likely to reveal how news discourse is ideologically constructed. As to *The Guardian/The Observer*, the slight difference in

the use of *invadir/to invade* and *ocupar/to occupy*, 13 and 16, respectively, is also revealing.

A comparison of the dictionary-based definitions of *invadir/to invade* and *ocupar/to occupy* in Table 1 and Table 2 in Appendix C provides more consistent linguistic evidence to state that ideology pervades the linguistic representation of the Landless Movement. Even though the denotative or literal meanings of *invadir/to invade* and *ocupar/to occupy* explicitly carry a negative sense, the definitions for *invadir/to invade* are much more incisive concerning ruthlessness than those for *ocupar/to occupy*. In *Folha de S. Paulo*, the preferred use of *invadir/to invade* has two main reasons. On the one hand, the newspaper lays stress on the actions of the movement and gives ample coverage of the process of invading farms. The verb *invadir/to invade* depicts the fierce nature of the action which is imputed to the MST members, i.e., they are responsible for forcefully attacking and destroying in order to take control of the targeted farm. On the other, within the Brazilian context of land reform the use of *invadir/to invade* differs from the use of *ocupar/to occupy* in news discourse. According to Indursky (1999, p. 179), the process of taking possession of a farm from the Landless Movement perspective is named *ocupação/occupation* whereas the same action is termed *invasão/invasion* by landowners. It is thus clear that the news discourse of *Folha de S. Paulo* is sided with landowners and by extension with the Brazilian Government.

On the grounds of the frequency of occurrences of *invadir/to invade* and *ocupar/to occupy* in *The Guardian/The Observer*, it is possible to infer that the distinction between the landowners' and the landless' discourses does not count when one form or the other is chosen by *The Guardian/The Observer* to describe the MST actions. In other words, *invadir/to invade* and *ocupar/to occupy* are used, to a large

extent, interchangeably although the use of *ocupar/to occupy* is the preferred form. Moreover, the total incidence of the two forms in *The Guardian/The Observer* also reveals that the newspaper is not mainly concerned with the process of farm/land occupation, as I have discussed above, but with a number of other pertinent socio-economic issues the Landless Movement is particularly concerned with.

In spite of the fact that *The Guardian/The Observer* foregrounds the relevant part played by the MST for the improvement of the lives of landless rural workers, it also publicizes that in order to achieve the objectives the movement members 'demonstrate' against the unfair official policies by 'mobilising' its members to 'struggle' for their rights. The 'fight' is usually carried out by 'storming' and 'squatting' on assumed unproductive land/farm so as to 'secure' the right to produce and finally 'gain' the title from the government. But sometimes the 'protests' lead the MST members to 'loot' supermarkets as a way to have provisions to 'resist' the pressures of ingroup members until they are 'benefited' with land distribution. But in their desire to 'prosper' many have 'collapsed' due to 'clashes' with the police force apparatus and also due to private armed forces used by landowners to prevent invasions. The use of such meaningful words also shows that *The Guardian/The Observer* publicizes aspects which depict both the positive and the negative sides of the Landless Movement. This, at least in theory, allows the readership to have access to a representation of the MST which, to some extent, provides information kept hidden in *Folha de S. Paulo*. Also in theory, this permits the readership to balance the consequences of the events reported and come to a conclusion based on independent reasoning.

The voices worded within quotation marks in *The Guardian/The Observer* also differ from those in *Folha de S. Paulo* in that in *The Guardian/The Observer* ingroup,

outgroup, and outside specialists are all invited to give their opinions on the issues discussed. For instance, Professor Riccardo Pretella, of Loudian University in Belgium, Professor Samir Amin of the World Forum Alternatives, Mario Lill an MST Leader, Economist Susan George, an organizer of the campaign against the Multi-lateral Agreement on Investment, Milton Viana, the main MST Press Officer, Julia Rochester of Amnesty campaigner for Brazil, the Prosecutor Marcello Freitas in *The Guardian/The Observer* 1999 corpus and the Barrister Evandro Lins e Silva, Professor Dan Baron Cohen, the Agrarian Reform Minister Raul Jungman, MST Spokesman Nilton Viana, Brazil's President Fernando Henrique Cardoso, Professor David Fleischer professor of politics at the Univesity of Brasilia, Jaime Callegari one of the MST's national coordinators in *The Guardian/The Observer* 2000 corpus constitute the group of specialists drawn on in order for news producer to construct a less-biased text. Their titles and affiliations endorse the authoritative nature of the news reported and at the same time establish the detachment position of the news producer without losing track of the credibility and keeping the authenticity of the news story. The quotations in *The Guardian/The Observer* 1999 and 2000 corpus fall into the categories of 'authoritative', 'detachment', and 'fidelity quotation', discussed in 3.4.4.

The Landless Movement is thus depicted not only as an evil-action movement. Owing to its very nature, that of revolutionizing agrarian reform in Brazil, it advocates radical actions through which a fairer society may be constructed. For the 'Order and Progress' ingroup this suffices to place the MST as a proscribed entity. *The Guardian/The Observer* not only shows the negative, but also the positive aspects of the Landless Movement enterprise and the consequences of its extremist actions as a

way to balance the news stories in such a way that the readership has a chance to come to a conclusion without the powerful influence of the news discourse.

3.6 Concluding Remarks

The mechanisms discussed above through which ideology is realized, expose its influential nature and reveal how it invisibly works in the Press in favour or against a specific group and the relevance for the readership to know about the way(s) the language-ideology relationship functions in the production of news stories to construct the discourse-representation composite. As Eggins (1994, p. 11) pertinently points out

The identification of ideology (...) should alert us to the fact that just as no text can be “free” of context (register or genre), so no text is free of ideology. In other words, to use language at all is to use it to encode particular positions, beliefs, biases, etc. However, for reasons which are themselves ideological, most language users have not been educated to identify ideology in text, but rather to “read” texts as natural, inevitable representations of reality. The implication of identifying ideology in text is that as readers of texts, we need to develop skills to be able to make explicit the ideological positions encoded, perhaps in order to resist or challenge them. This means we need a way of talking about how language is not just representing but actively constructing our view of the world.

The mechanisms of news discourse while representing social relationships within a given social milieu has a similar underlying nature as that of language and ideology. It does not aim to have an overt influence on behaviour and attitudes and cause changes in the short run. Rather, it works as a hidden mediating device which aims at constructing, in the long run, a bridge connecting the intended audience and the real factual world which lies, most of the times, beyond our grasp. In so doing, the Press becomes a powerful loaded weapon in that it possesses the means to bring the public outside world into the readership private domain through a perspective which

is usually in line with the interests of the elite dominant classes. Unless the process is questioned and challenged, the effects of such mediatory *modus operandi* tends to meet the objective(s) established by the Press which is then to keep the power control in the hands of the ruling elite group sustaining this way its *status quo*.

At first sight, the conclusions I reached in this text might sound partial towards the outgroup. It should be minded, however, that the current research aims at investigating the representation of the Landless Movement in the Press, not at an analysis of other parties directly involved with it. Such a one-sided reading perspective should alert inattentive readers to the fact that the textual co-construction process, which inevitably involves an exchange between the text and the reader – reading text \rightleftharpoons reader's background knowledge – may be an ideological one in that readers also bring their, usually unconscious, ideologies into the reading process.

Notes

1. There is not a common-sense view concerning the exact date when Destutt de Tracy coined the term ideology (*idéologie*). According to Childers and Hentzi (1995, p. 149), for instance, the term was used for the first time by Destutt de Tracy in 1796.
2. This highly simplified mapping of the concept of ideology from its coinage in the late 18th century to its modern sense does not aim at depicting the whole theoretical picture. Concerning the subject, my intention is merely illustrative and does not intend to detail or to engage in a debate of the classic views of ideology. Not only because it would require book-length discussions, but also because the numberless existing books and articles on the issue provide a more consistent and extensive analysis of the concept. Those interested in any of the conceptions of ideology briefly introduced in this section should refer to the abundant literature available in the market. For definitions, introductions, surveys, and more detailed discussions of the concepts of ideology mentioned in this section refer, for example, to Althusser, (1969/1970, pp. 238-250; 1994, pp. 87-111), Fowler, et. al. (1979), Chau (1982), Andersen (1988, pp. 75-92), Gee (1990, pp. 3-26); Fairclough (1989; 1991 *passim*; 1992, pp. 86-100; 1995a, pp. 27-53, 70-83 and *passim*), Childers and Hentzi (1995, pp. 149-151), Fowler (1986, pp. 17-18 and 22-26, *passim*; 1991 *passim*; 1996, pp. 3-14), Eagleton (1994, pp. 1-20, and the collection of readings in this edited volume), van Dijk (1998), Orlandi (1999 *passim*), among many others.
3. In van Dijk (1995) a brief discussion of some fragments of his theory of ideology is forwarded. But a detailed study of these concepts is available in van Dijk (1998) in which he proposes a socio-cognitive framework to investigate ideology.
4. After the 9/11 terrorist attacks to the World Trade Center in New York, the US flag was soon used as the symbol of nationalism every citizen drew on in order to show they were together supporting the nation in times of social turbulence. (see <http://us.a1.yimg.com/us.yimg.com/a/1-/java/ipro/iprodesigns2a.html>)



The US flag figures in a wide number of products such as American Clip-On Flag, USA Magnetic Flags - 'God Bless America', Flag Antenna Ball, USA

Window Flags - 'God Bless America', American Flag Lapel Pin, American Flag Baseball Cap, Ribbon Lapel Pin, 'United We Stand' Lapel Pin, USA Pride Bumper Stickers, 'These Colors Don't Run!' - American Flag T-Shirt Slogan, Wavy American Flag Keychain, USA Handheld Flags, American Flag T-Shirt, etc. After the collapse of the Twin Towers, the US Congress unanimously asked all US citizens to fly the US flag to show their union. The slogans 'These Colors Don't Run', 'God Bless America', 'United We Stand', and 'Be Proud To Be An American!' are also used to keep US citizens together and the country steady around a symbol which represents patriotism and freedom. (see http://www.usaflagsdirect.com/index.cfm?affiliate_id=50005)

5. The Portuguese version of the description of the Landless Movement flag can be found at <http://www3.sul.com.br/mstpr/bandeira.htm>
6. For more details refer to <http://www.crwflags.com/fotw/flags/su.html>
7. In the 1999-2000 *Folha de S. Paulo* corpus, there occurs a large variety of words/phrases falling within discrete grammatical categories (verbs, adverbs, nouns, adjectives, etc.). For the sake of convenience, I replace the various tense forms by the infinitive while working with the verb phrases and turn nouns into verbs as a way to standardize the analysis (Table 1, Appendix C). Also, I consider as a linguistic item for the analysis longer stretches of language when constituting a single meaningful unit. The same procedure is employed in the analysis of 1999-2000 *The Guardian/The Observer* corpus.

CHAPTER IV

FINAL REMARKS

“When the legend becomes fact, print the legend.”

In: *The Man Who Shot Liberty Valence*

4.1 Agrarian Reform in the Crossfire: Summary of the main findings

Due to its very complex and deep-seated social, political, and economic nature, the agrarian reform is indeed a Brazilian problem which defies either short or long term solutions. Rather than being converging towards a rational outcome, the parties involved, together with their associates, seem to have set out a never-ending dispute for arable land which turns the agricultural area into a powder keg ready to explode.

This social setting can be easily visualized through the way the Landless Movement is depicted in the Press, particularly in *Folha de S. Paulo*. The theoretical framework used to investigate the way language is employed to mediate between the event and the readership, i.e., between reality and the audience, via the production of news stories, has brought to light the utilization of hidden linguistic mechanisms not available to the ordinary citizen who makes automatized and thus unconscious use of his mother tongue. Being unable to detect such manipulative mechanisms and taking for granted that the Press *is* an impartial social institution, news consumers are usually

potential victims of the powerful and influential role the Press plays in the construction of group based relationships, in this case, in the contemporary Brazilian society.

What is exposed in the analysis of Hard News Reports about the Landless Movement corroborates the existence of a close relationship between the linguistic and the social structures. And it is this bi-directional feature of language that allows newsmakers to linguistically represent socio-cultural events in ways that they inevitably embed their ideological positions in the print news discourse and in turn sway inattentive readership. In other words, the print-mediated communication is, along these lines, as biased by nature as any other means of human (non-)linguistic exchange in that it aims basically at persuading newsreaders of the dominant elite values and ideologies. Language is thus used not as a means to transform social relations, but rather as a way to sustain the ingroup *status quo* through the opinionated news discourse representation of an outgroup threatener.

All things considered, the tendency is for *Folha de S. Paulo*, unlike *The Guardian/The Observer*, to print the legend, not the fact, and for news consumers to accept the legend as fact. The legend strongly advocates that agrarian reform is reached only and if only unconditional respect for the democratic state of affairs and for the Brazilian constitution is observed. The fact is that those in charge of creating and applying the law within the Brazilian democratic society are those who own most of arable land and who are not enthusiastic about the realization of agrarian reform in Brazil. The fact reveals much more than the legend and newspapers, which have a large readership and which are in line with the ingroup ideology, are not actually concerned with reporting the real state of affairs, i.e., the readership should not make out the difference between legend and fact because the less news readers know about

reality the more the current elite *status quo* is preserved. In other words, the legend, in this case, seems to have been replacing the fact.

4.2 Implications of the Study

The relevance of this research consists mostly of offering a contribution to the ever growing area of Discourse Analysis and, more specifically, to Critical Discourse Analysis – the analysis of text in relation to its social milieu, i.e., the social, cultural, and political environment in which the texts are constructed (Crystal, 1994, p. 87; Fairclough, 1989, 1992, 1995a, *passim*; Harris, et. al., 1995, p. 48; Trask, 1999, pp. 62-63). As such, it contributes to reveal how language conceals ideological processes and establishes social relations. By the same token, the study particularly lays emphasis on the pivotal role of language for the analysis of the context of situation and the context of culture, i.e., it is possible to draw concrete conclusions about contexts by means of a bottom-up investigation which holds language as the primary source of human social interaction.

As the research delves into one of the pillars of mass communication – the Press –, its findings, at least in theory, are likely to contribute towards the establishment of a more conscious society in that it alerts outgroup individuals of the fundamental role language plays in the construction of social relations, i.e., how language is able to sustain, transform, and reflect relations of subservience, power, and dominance. Consequently, people's awareness of the potential of language as a mediating semiotic system gives rise to more conscious citizens concerned with more equalitarian social relations and warns future generations about the hazards to take language for granted as an innate and thus transparent human attribute.

On the other hand, the study also contributes both to the teaching/learning of the mother tongue and a foreign/second language. It provides pre-service and in-service language professionals with insights on how to observe ideology in action and how to explore this invisible component embedded in everyone's daily use of language. It is not only an example of how ideology pervades every single social relation – from family talk to political speech – but also a way to warn teachers/educators of the relevance of drawing their learners' attention towards the myriad of possible realizations of ideology in discourse.

All in all, the study of language should not be limited to the command of grammar rules, it *must* indeed reach over it. In this concern, the research also provides an alternative for the study of the concept of transitivity which differs from the dogmatic view imposed by the majority of Brazilian Portuguese prescriptive grammars. The Hallidayan approach enlarges the scope of transitivity and enriches the issue in that it encompasses sociolinguistic aspects of language in actual use which in turn leads to a more realistic theoretical rationale. The application of the Hallidayan concept of transitivity proved to be a useful lexicogrammatical device for the investigation of the representation of the Landless Movement in the Press, but since the theory was developed based on the English language, a process of adaptation seems to be required if it is to be fully applied to the Portuguese language.

4.3 Limitations of the Study and Suggestions for Further Research

This research, just like any other scientific research in the humanities, is limited by a number of constraints. It is very difficult, not to say impossible, to present conclusive and objective results of any social issue investigated. This happens due to the impossibility for any researcher to have a global, non-partial view of all

social aspects at play which influence the development of an investigation. Not all relevant social variables can be taken into account nor is the researcher an observer deprived of feelings, thoughts, critical positions, ideologies, etc. Just like any other human being, the researcher is essentially a social being and as such can not pretend to be isolated from the social milieu he/she is inherently part of. The researcher's intrusion may happen unconsciously and interfere in his/her attitudes and opinions. It is, therefore, an illusion to think that at the end of a thesis the conclusions achieved are the true findings based on the real facts analysed. At most, what is offered is a perspective and an incomplete view of a social issue. What seems to make a research more or less reliable and trustworthy is the level of awareness on the part of the researcher concerning his/her inevitable attachment with the object under investigation. Whatever theoretical foundations, analytical procedures, criteria adopted, etc., a researcher may try to neutralize his/her interference in the analytical process and in turn in the results. However, he/she is forced to take positions when, for instance, the criteria for the selection of the corpus have to be established or guiding questions posed. Moreover, it is not rare to find researchers who tend to, unconsciously or not, guide his/her work towards a specific direction so that the findings meet the expected initial speculations. But all that does not mean that a social study is always biased and unreliable. According to Fairclough (1989, p. 5)

The scientific investigation of social matters is perfectly compatible with committed and 'opinionated' investigators (there are no others!), and being committed does not excuse you from arguing rationally or producing evidence for your statements.

As a Brazilian citizen having been brought up within the Brazilian socio-linguistic context, I am convinced I am deeply involved with the social matter investigated in this thesis. My opinion, whether for or against the Landless

Movement, for instance, is the aspect in the research which should count least, unless it is supported by solid linguistic evidence taken from the corpus analysed. I am also convinced that I do share most of the inevitable drawbacks discussed above, but being aware of such weaknesses might be a positive attitude in relation to my responsibility as far as objectivity is concerned. At least, what I intend to offer is a contribution to the academic field and particularly an attempt to raise one's awareness about aspects of the representation of a critical Brazilian social problem. This thesis *is not* and *does not* intend to be the final word. All in all, a finished job does not mean the work is done.

Another central component in any thesis but which also sets limits for any research is the corpus. No matter the length of a corpus, it always provides no more than a sample of the subject under study. Consequently, the researcher is only able to find out and bring to light what is embedded in the chosen corpus. In other words, the thesis is just a minute illustration of what language is all about, from the perspective of the researcher in a given social and historical interlude.

Outside this study is the analysis of the news processing – from the event source through to the reading public – in which chief reporters, journalists, news editors, editors, copy subs, typesetters, proofreaders, stone subs, among others (see Bell, 1991, pp. 44-50), interfere, to a greater or a lesser extent, in the construction of the final product – the news discourse.

Beyond the scope of this investigation is also the interpersonal function. Although Halliday (1973, pp. 105-107 and 1994, p. 179) advocates that language has three functional components of meaning – ideational/experiential, interpersonal, and textual – and that these are simultaneously realized through the grammar or language, I dealt only with the ideational/experiential (via the System of Transitivity) and the

textual (via the System of Theme) functions as the theoretical analytical framework. The interpersonal function could have served as a tool to investigate, for instance, how news producers would use language to persuade the reader to take a certain position before the text and how the reader would react to the way a given event is reported. In such a case, the linguistic mechanisms employed in the construction of news discourse could be investigated in order to bring to light the way the interaction between the news text producer and the news text consumer occurs and how news discourse effectively intervenes in the construal of a position on the part of news consumers, as far as the issue being reported is concerned.

The application of the Systemic Functional Linguistics to the analysis of *Folha de S. Paulo* corpus, particularly as far as the System of Transitivity is concerned, made evident the lexicogrammatical similarities between English and Portuguese, but also displayed some complex discrete problematic issues which deserve a study of their own. Moreover, the application of other components of the socio-cognitive approach to ideology used to investigate the corpus would reveal a myriad of instances in which ideology is at play through language. On the one hand, one could investigate the impact of news discourse on the readership, i.e., whether news producers actually reach their intended objectives, whether the readership react positively or negatively to the news stories, whether or not the readership actually internalizes the MST representation offered by the newspaper, among others. On the other hand, an investigation into the linguistic devices used by the MST might reveal the way the Landless Movement members linguistically construct their group identity and how language helps create group unity and in turn keep it a unified movement, which ideological discourse structures are used to attract adherents for the agrarian

reform cause and how language assists the dissemination of the tenets of the MST not only within the Brazilian society, but also around the world.

These limitations, to mention but a few, could bring about a number of interesting aspects to be investigated as far as language in actual use is concerned. Moreover, they could be used as springboards for further research in the areas of Media Studies, Communication, Sociology, Systemic Functional Linguistics, Critical Discourse Analysis, Genre Theory, Cognition, Political Studies, among others, or at the encounter between these or other research areas of human studies.

REFERENCES

Note: This reference section contains only the works cited in the text. Other texts which also contributed indirectly to the making of the research have been left outside.

Abbagnano, Nicola. (1998) *Dicionário de Filosofia*. São Paulo, Martins Fontes. pp. 531-533.

Adams, Hazard. & Searle, Leroy. (eds.) (1986) *Critical Theory Since 1965*. Tallahassee, Florida State University Press.

Alexander, Peter. (1951) *The Complete Works of Shakespeare*. London, Collins.

Althusser, Louis. (1969/1970) "On Ideology". In: Adams, Hazard. & Searle, Leroy. (eds.) (1986) *Critical Theory Since 1965*. Tallahassee, Florida State University Press. pp. 238-250.

_____. (1994) "Selected Texts". In: Eagleton, Terry. (ed.) *Ideology*. London, Longman. pp. 87-111.

Andersen, Roger. (1988) *The Power and the Word: Language, Power and Change*. London, Paladin.

Anjos, Margarida dos. e Ferreira, Marina Baird (eds.) (1999) *Novo Aurélio Século XXI. O Dicionário da Língua Portuguesa*. Rio de Janeiro, Nova Fronteira.

Assis, Machado. (1997) *A Semana I*. São Paulo, Globo.

Bechara, Evanildo (1988) *Moderna Gramática Portuguesa*. São Paulo, Companhia Editora Nacional.

Bell, Allan. (1991) *The Language of News Media*. Oxford, Blackwell.

_____. (1996) "Text, Time and Technology in News English." In: Goddman, Sharon. and Graddol, David. (eds.) *Redesigning English: New Texts, New Identities*. London, Routledge. pp. 03-37.

_____. (1999) "News Stories as Narrative". In: Jaworski, Adam. and Coupland, Nikolas. (eds.) *The Discourse Reader*. London, Routledge. pp. 236-251.

- Belsey, Catherine. (1988) *Critical Practice*. London, Methuen.
- Benites, Sonia Aparecida Lopes. (1996) "A Citação no Discurso Jornalístico." In: *Trabalhos em Linguística Aplicada*. n. 28, pp. 27-33.
- Brown, G. and Yule, G. (1983) *Discourse Analysis*. Cambridge, Cambridge University Press.
- Caldas-Coulthard, Carmen Rosa. (1997) *News as Social Practice*. Advanced Research in English Series. Florianópolis, Pós-Graduação em Inglês.
- Caldas-Coulthard, Carmen Rosa. and Coulthard, Malcolm. (eds.) (1996) *Texts and Practices: Readings in Critical Discourse Analysis*. London, Routledge.
- Carroll, Lewis. (1999) *Alice's Adventures in Wonderland and Through the Looking Glass*. Bath, Parragon.
- Chauí, Marilena de Souza. (1982) *O que é ideologia*. São Paulo, Brasiliense.
- Childers, Joseph. and Hentzi, Gary. (eds.) (1995) *The Columbia Dictionary of Modern Literary and Cultural Criticism*. New York, Columbia University Press.
- Christie, Frances and Martin J. R. (eds.) (1997) *Genre and Institutions: Social Processes in the Workplace and School*. London, Cassell.
- Concise Oxford Dictionary - CD-ROM*. (1995) Oxford, Oxford University Press.
- Corbett, John. (1997) *Language and Scottish Literature*. Edinburgh, Edinburgh University Press.
- Crowther, Jonathan. (ed.) (1993) *Oxford Advanced Learner's Encyclopedic Dictionary*. Oxford, Oxford University Press.
- Crystal, David. (1987) *The Cambridge Encyclopedia of Language*. Cambridge, Cambridge University Press.
- _____. (1994) *Dictionary of Language and Languages*. London, Penguin.

Dickens, Charles. (1970) *Hard Times*. London, Longman.

Downes, Brenda. and Miller, Steve. (1998) *Media Studies*. London, Hodder & Stoughton.

Eagleton, Terry. (1994) "Introduction." In: Eagleton, Terry. (ed.) *Ideology*. London, Longman. pp. 1-20.

_____. (ed.) (1994) *Ideology*. London, Longman.

Eggs, Suzanne. (1994) *An Introduction to Systemic Functional Linguistics*. London, Pinter.

Eschholz, Paul. and Rosa, Alfred. (eds.) (1988) *Subject and Strategy: A Rhetoric Reader*. New York, St. Martin's Press.

Fairclough, Norman. (1989) *Language and Power*. London, Longman.

_____. (1991) "Language and Ideology." In: *Trabalhos em Linguística Aplicada*. n. 17, pp. 113-131.

_____. (1992) *Discourse and Social Change*. Cambridge, Polity Press.

_____. (1995a) *Critical Discourse Analysis: The Critical Study of Language*. London, Longman.

_____. (1995b) *Media Discourse*. London, Edward Arnold.

Firth, John Rupert. (1957) *Papers in Linguistics 1934-1951*. London, Oxford University Press.

Folha de S. Paulo - CD-ROM. (1999) São Paulo, Publifolha.

Folha de S. Paulo. "Ligas lutavam por morte digna." Quinta-feira, 2 de novembro de 2000. Cotidiano C4.

Fortkamp, Mailce Borges Mota. e Tomitch, Lêda Maria Braga. (orgs.) (2000) *Aspectos de Linguística Aplicada: Estudos em Homenagem ao Professor Hilário Inácio Bohn*. Florianópolis, Insular.

Fowler, Roger. (1986) *Linguistic Criticism*. Oxford, Oxford University Press.

_____. (1991) *Language in the News: Discourse and Ideology in the Press*. London, Routledge.

_____. (1996) "On Critical Linguistics." In: Caldas-Couthard, Carmen Rosa. and Coulthard, Malcolm. (eds.) *Texts and Practices: Readings in Critical Discourse Analysis*. London, Routledge. pp. 03-14.

Fowler, Roger., Hodge, Bob., Kress, Gunther., and Trew, Tony. (eds.) (1979) *Language and Control*. London, Routledge & Kegan Paul.

Freire, Paulo. (1970) *Pedagogia do Oprimido*. São Paulo, Paz e Terra.

_____. (1970) *Pedagogy of the Oppressed*. New York, Continuum.

Gee, James Paul. (1990) *Social Linguistics and Literacies: Ideology in Discourse*. London, The Farmer Press.

Goddman, Sharon. and Graddol, David. (eds.) (1996) *Redesigning English: New Texts, New Identities*. London, Routledge.

Greenbaum, Sidney. and Quirk, Randolph. (1990) *A Student's Grammar of the English Language*. Harlow, Longman.

Halliday, M.A.K. (1973) *Explorations in the Functions of Language*. London, Edward Arnold.

_____. (1978) *Language as Social Semiotic: The Social Interpretation of Language and Meaning*. London, Edward Arnold.

_____. (1994) *An Introduction to Functional Grammar*. London, Edward Arnold.

Harris, Theodore L. and Hodges, Richard E. (eds.) (1995) *The Literacy Dictionary: The Vocabulary of Reading and Writing*. Newark, International Reading Association.

Hartley, John. (1982) *Understanding News*. London, Routledge.

Hayakawa, Samuel Ichiyâe. (1990) "The Language of Social Control." In: Hayakawa, Samuel Ichiyâe. and Hayakawa, Alan R. *Language in Thought and Action*. San Diego, Harvest. pp. 64-73.

Hayakawa, Samuel Ichiyâe. and Hayakawa, Alan R. (1990) *Language in Thought and Action*. San Diego, Harvest.

Houaiss, Antônio. e Villar, Mauro de Salles. (2001) *Dicionário Houaiss da Língua Portuguesa*. Rio de Janeiro, Objetiva.

<http://us.a1.yimg.com/us.yimg.com/a/1-/java/ipro/iprodesigns2a.html>

<http://www3.sul.com.br/mstpr/bandeira.htm>

<http://www.abc.org.uk/>

<http://www.abc.org.uk/cgi-bin/gen5?runprog=abc&noc=y&type=>

Audit Bureau of Circulation National Newspaper Data for the month of: Feb 2001.

<http://www.crwflags.com/fotw/flags/su.html>

<http://www.estado.com.br/edicao/encarte/terra/terra1.html> – "MST - O filão da terra".

<http://www.estado.com.br/english/semterra/msteng5.html> – Origins: "MST rose in the 80's, supported by the Church and the Worker's Party".

<http://www.guardian.co.uk>

<http://www.guardian.co.uk/guardian/article/0,5814,184281,00.html>

<http://www.observer.co.uk/article/0,5814,211601,00.html>

<http://www.sanet.com.br/~semterra/> – História do MST: "Elementos fundamentais da História do MST".

- <http://www.theworldpress.com/>
<http://www.theworldpress.com/ru/brazil.htm>
- http://www.usaflagsdirect.com/index.cfm?affiliate_id=50005
- Indursky, Freda. (1999) "De ocupação a invasão: efeitos de sentido no discurso do/sobre o MST." In: Indursky, Freda. e Ferreira, Maria Cristina Leandro. (orgs.) *Os Múltiplos Territórios da Análise do Discurso*. Porto Alegre, Sagra Luzzatto. pp. 173-186.
- Indursky, Freda. e Ferreira, Maria Cristina Leandro. (orgs.) (1999) *Os Múltiplos Territórios da Análise do Discurso*. Porto Alegre, Sagra Luzzatto.
- Jaworski, Adam. and Coupland, Nikolas. (eds.) (1999) *The Discourse Reader*. London, Routledge. pp. 236-251.
- Leech, Geoffrey. and Svartvik, Jan. (1975) *A Communicative Grammar of English*. Harlow, Longman.
- Longman Interactive English Dictionary - CD-ROM*. (1993) London, Longman.
- Malavolta, Luiz. (1996) "Sem-terra invadem área no Pontal". 30 de setembro de 1996. Editoria: Brasil, Página: 1-14. In: *Folha de S. Paulo - CD-ROM*. (1999) São Paulo, Publifolha.
- Malinowski, Bronislaw. (1923) "The Problem of Meaning in Primitive Languages." In: Ogden, C. K. & Richards, I. A. (eds.) *The Meaning of Meaning*. Supplement 1. London, Routledge & Kegan Paul. pp. 296-336.
- Manser, Martin H. and Turton, Nigel D. (1987) *The Penguin Wordmaster Dictionary*. London, Penguin.
- Martin, James R. (1997) "Analysing genre: functional parameters." In: Christie, Frances and Martin J. R. (eds.) *Genre and Institutions: Social Processes in the Workplace and School*. London, Cassell. pp. 01- 39.
- Matthiessen, Christian. and Halliday, M.A.K. (1997) "Systemic Functional Grammar: A First Step into the Theory." (ms). Also available on line at http://minerva.ling.mq.edu.au/Resources/VirtuallLibrary/Publications/sfg_firststep/SFG%20intro%20New.html

- McKechnie, Jean L. (ed.) (1968) *Webster's New Twentieth Century Dictionary of the English Language - Unabridged*. Cleveland, World Publishing Company.
- Meurer, José Luiz. (2000) "O Conhecimento de Gêneros Textuais e a Formação do Profissional da Linguagem." In: Fortkamp, Mailce Borges Mota. e Tomitch, Lêda Maria Braga. (orgs.) *Aspectos de Linguística Aplicada: Estudos em Homenagem ao Professor Hilário Inácio Bohn*. Florianópolis, Insular. pp. 149-166.
- Montgomery, Martin. (1995) *An Introduction to Language and Society*. London, Routledge.
- Neto, Pasquale Cipro. & Infante, Ulisses. (1999) *Gramática da Língua Portuguesa*. São Paulo, Scipione.
- Ogden, C. K. & Richards, I. A. (eds.) (1923) *The Meaning of Meaning*. Supplement 1. London, Routledge & Kegan Paul.
- Orlandi, Eni P. (1999) *Análise de Discurso: Princípios e Procedimentos*. Campinas, Pontes.
- Paschoalin, Maria Aparecida. & Spadoto, Neuza Terezinha. (1989) *Gramática: Teoria e Exercícios*. São Paulo, FTD.
- Quirk, Randolph., Greenbaum, Sidney., Leech, Geoffrey., and Svartvik, Jan. (1972) *A Grammar of Contemporary English*. Harlow, Longman.
- Santos, Mauro Bittencourt dos. (1996) "The textual organization of research paper abstracts in applied linguistics." In: *Text*. vol. 16, n. 4, pp. 481-499.
- Schemo, Diana Jean. (1996) "Violence Growing in Battle Over Brazilian Land." In: *N.Y. Times News Service*. Online at <http://www.latino.com/news/0420braz.html> (Copied on Tuesday, 9 November 1999, at 10.15 p.m.)
- Sinclair, John, (ed.) (1990a) *Collins Cobuild English Grammar*. London, Harper Collins.
- _____. (ed.) (1990b) *Collins Cobuild English Language Dictionary*. London, Collins.

- _____. (1995) *Collins Cobuild English Dictionary*. London, Harper Collins.
- Stedile, João Pedro. e Fernandes, Bernardo Mançano. (1999) *Brava Gente: A trajetória do MST e a luta pela terra no Brasil*. São Paulo, Fundação Perseu Abramo.
- Stein, Jess. (ed.) (1970) *The Random House Dictionary of the English Language*. New York, Random House.
- Stubbs, Michael. (1983) *Discourse Analysis*. Chicago, University of Chicago Press.
- Swales, John M. (1990) *Genre Analysis: English in Academic and Research Settings*. Cambridge, Cambridge University Press.
- Terra, Ernani. (1999) *Curso Prático de Gramática*. São Paulo, Scipione.
- The Man Who Shot Liberty Valence*. (1962) Director: John Ford, Producer: Willis Goldbeck, Performers: James Stewart and John Wayne. Co-Starring: Vera Miles, Lee Marvin, Edmond O'Brien, Andy Devine, and Ken Murray. Paramount Pictures and John Ford Productions, Videocassette.
- Trask, Robert L. (1999) *Key Concepts in Language and Linguistics*. London, Routledge.
- van Dijk, Teun A. (1988) *News as Discourse*. Hillsdale, Lawrence Erlbaum Associates.
- _____. (1995) "Discourse Semantics and Ideology." In: *Discourse and Society*. vol. 6, n. 2. pp. 243-289.
- _____. (1998) *Ideology: A Multidisciplinary Approach*. London, Sage.
- White, Peter. (1997) "Death, disruption and the moral order: the narrative impulse in mass-media 'hard news' reporting." In: Christie, Frances. and Martin, J. R. (eds.) *Genre and Institutions: Social Processes in the Workplace and School*. London, Cassell. pp. 101-133.

The Corpus

Texts from *Folha de S. Paulo* – 1999

Folha de S. Paulo. “MST invade fazenda de irmão do governador Dante de Oliveira”. Quinta-feira, 17 de junho de 1999. Brasil 1-11.

_____. “Unicamp ajuda MST a formar ‘líderes’”. Terça-feira, 6 de julho de 1999. Brasil 1-6.

_____. “Em SP, UDR eleva tom contra o MST”. Segunda-feira, 16 de agosto de 1999. Brasil 1-6.

_____. “Sem-terra tentam saquear mercado”. Quarta-feira, 15 de setembro de 1999. Brasil 1-10.

_____. “Com verba pública, MST dá aula a 100 mil”. Segunda-feira, 11 de outubro de 1999. Brasil 1-7.

_____. “Evento reunirá zapatistas, Farc e MST”. Segunda-feira, 8 de novembro de 1999. Brasil 1-11.

Texts from *Folha de S. Paulo* – 2000

Folha de S. Paulo. “Ato do MST acaba em conflito em PE”. Sexta-feira, 28 de janeiro de 2000. Brasil 1-11.

_____. “Sem-terra urbanos completam um ano”. Domingo, 6 de fevereiro de 2000. Brasil 1-15.

_____. “MST anuncia 65 invasões em 5 Estados”. Terça-feira, 18 de abril de 2000. Brasil 1-12.

_____. “Festa não é convite a ‘velório’, diz FHC”. Quinta-feira, 20 de abril de 2000. Brasil 1-10.

_____. “Assentamentos rurais sofrem favelização”. Domingo, 25 de junho de 2000. Brasil A15.

_____. “Reunião do MST prega invasão e queimada”. Sábado, 12 de agosto de 2000. Brasil A10.

Texts from *The Guardian/The Observer* – 1999

The Guardian/The Observer. “Promisedlands”. Wednesday January 6, 1999. (This article was copied from <http://www.guardian.co.uk/> on Saturday, 13 May 2000, at 11.00pm).

_____. “Rousseau revisited by Alternative Davos”. Monday February 1, 1999. (This article was copied from <http://www.guardian.co.uk/> on Saturday, 13 May 2000, at 11.05pm).

_____. “High pressure”. Wednesday February 3, 1999. (This article was copied from <http://www.guardian.co.uk/> on Saturday, 13 May 2000, at 11.10pm).

_____. “Making a life from the ground up”. Thursday May 20, 1999. (This article was copied from <http://www.guardian.co.uk/> on Saturday, 13 May 2000, at 11.15pm).

_____. “150 policemen on trial for massacre of Brazilian peasants”. Tuesday August 17, 1999. (This article was copied from <http://www.guardian.co.uk/> on Saturday, 13 May 2000, at 11.20pm).

_____. “Officers 'guilty' of massacre go free”. Friday, August 20, 1999. (This article was copied from <http://www.guardian.co.uk/> on Saturday, 13 May 2000, at 11.25pm).

Texts from *The Guardian/The Observer* – 2000

The Guardian/The Observer. “Today the person who can't read is nothing”. Monday January 31, 2000. (This article was copied from <http://www.guardian.co.uk/> on Saturday, 13 May 2000, at 11.30pm).

_____. “Law star returns to defend squatter leader”. Monday April 3, 2000. (This article was copied from <http://www.guardian.co.uk/> on Saturday, 13 May 2000, at 11.35pm).

_____. “Landless movement tries for a remake”. Monday April 3, 2000. (This article was copied from <http://www.guardian.co.uk/> on Saturday, 13 May 2000, at 11.40pm).

_____. “Victory for landless movement”. Friday April 7, 2000. (This article was copied from <http://www.guardian.co.uk/> on Saturday, 13 May 2000, at 11.45pm).

_____. “Brazil's landless to spoil big day”. Friday April 21, 2000. (This article was copied from <http://www.guardian.co.uk/> on Saturday, 13 May 2000, at 11.50pm).

_____. “Stakes rise in Brazil's land battle”. Tuesday May 9, 2000. (This article was copied from <http://www.guardian.co.uk/> on Saturday, 13 May 2000, at 11.55pm).

APPENDICES

Appendix A

Sample Text 1

Rainha promete novas ações Sem-terra invadem área no Pontal

LUIZ MALAVOLTA

da Agência Folha, no Pontal do Paranapanema

- [1] Cerca de 700 sem-terra invadiram na madrugada de ontem a fazenda Rancho Grande, em Euclides da Cunha (760 km a oeste de São Paulo), e iniciaram com tratores o preparo da terra para plantio.
- [2] O líder dos sem-terra no Pontal do Paranapanema, José Rainha Jr., anunciou que a invasão da fazenda deflagrou o que o MST está chamando de "operação eleitoral".
- [3] Segundo Rainha, a próxima fazenda a ser invadida será a Santa Rita, em Mirante do Paranapanema (640 km de SP), de Marcelo Negrão, um dos principais articuladores da UDR (União Democrática Ruralista). Negrão mantém na fazenda 20 seguranças armados.
- [4] Rainha não informou quando a Santa Rita vai ser invadida. "Nós queremos que o governo faça uma vitória na propriedade. Essa vitória vai dizer se a terra é improdutiva. Se for, o governo deve desapropriar a fazenda", afirmou.
- [5] A Agência Folha não conseguiu localizar ontem Negrão para comentar as declarações de Rainha. O dono da fazenda Rancho Grande, Otávio Eduardo Ferreira, também não foi encontrado.
- [6] O MST anunciou também que os sem-terra vão reiniciar hoje o bloqueio das agências do Banco do Brasil no Pontal.
- [7] Na sexta-feira, as agências de Teodoro Sampaio, Santo Anastácio e Presidente Venceslau foram bloqueadas por grupos de sem-terra, em protesto contra o atraso na liberação de financiamento da chamada safra de verão.
- [8] Rainha afirmou que dois ônibus com 120 sem-terra rumaram para São Paulo. Eles vão participar da greve dos bancários na capital, mas devem fazer também o bloqueio de uma agência do BB.
- [9] Segundo Rainha, a superintendência do banco em Presidente Prudente (558 km de São Paulo) comunicou que pode liberar financiamento imediatamente para 300 dos 1.220 assentados em projetos de reforma agrária.
- [10] O MST afixou cerca de dez placas confeccionadas com tinta fosforescente às margens da rodovia Sandovalina-Teodoro Sampaio.
- [11] As placas "avisam" aos motoristas a existência de "pistoleiros da UDR" próximo do acampamento dos sem-terra. Nas placas está escrito: "Cuidado, a cem metros pistoleiros da UDR".

Sample Text 2

Violence Growing in Battle Over Brazilian Land


By Diana Jean Schemo

- [1] RIO DE JANEIRO, Brazil, April 20, 1996 -- A confrontation in northern Brazil between families seeking land to farm and the police ended in bloodshed this week, when the police opened fire and killed 19 people.
- [2] The clash between rural families and police was one of the most violent since last August, when organizations seeking land reform announced they would increase wildcat occupations of the vast unproductive estates that dominate the Brazilian countryside to step up pressure on the Brazilian government.
- [3] The most recent clash took place in the state of Para on Wednesday, when state police officers were sent to clear a highway the homesteaders had been occupying for two days.
- [4] The attack resembled a predawn raid against squatters occupying land in the western state of Rondonia last August. That showdown ended in the deaths of at least 11 people.
- [5] Brazil has one of the most uneven land distributions in the world, with 45 percent of the land belonging to 1 percent of the population. The leaders of the land reform movement contend that 15 million people out of Brazil's population of 150 million are seeking land. The government says that figure is exaggerated.
- [6] While the government has agreed to redistribute land, state and local governments are dominated by landowners who have resisted the moves.
- [7] Some have hired private armies to defend their claims. Under Brazilian law, land that is occupied and used for 10 years becomes the property of the person living on it.
- [8] The killings last week, which were filmed by a local television crew and shown on national television Thursday, prompted outrage. "Shame" read Friday's banner headline in the *Jornal do Brasil*.
- [9] The tapes contradicted accounts by the police that demonstrators had shot first. The film showed police officers firing machine guns into the air as they arrived. As the demonstrators, some throwing stones, advanced toward the police, the officers fired directly at them.
- [10] Nineteen people were killed and some 40 wounded, including two police officers. At local hospitals, doctors said there were signs some of the homesteaders were executed.
- [11] President Fernando Henrique Cardoso strongly criticized the police "incompetence," and announced he would send federal troops to protect the homesteaders. "Nothing justifies police shooting people who are demonstrating their opinions," he said.
- [12] Cardoso said that his government was fulfilling its pledges to grant unused land to poor families, although activists accuse the president of inflating statistics. Cardoso has vowed to settle 280,000 landless families and says he settled 40,000 last year.
- [13] On Friday, he also pledged to speed up two bills that had been stalled in Congress. One would subject military police to prosecution in civil courts, and the second would speed up the legal procedures for the government appropriation and redistribution of unproductive land.
- [14] He appealed to the leaders of the land reform movement to drop their strategy of confrontation -- a step Diolinda Alves da Silva, leader of the movement for the landless, ruled out Friday. "Whoever dies, we lose," he said. "But there are plenty more to continue our fight."
- [15] Few people expect that the latest deaths will alter the collision course that both sides appear to have set upon. In the last 10 years, 220 people have died in the fight over land, according to the church-based Pastoral Land Commission.
- [16] And while Cardoso has pledged that the police will be punished for shooting down the demonstrators, none of those involved in last summer's massacre of rural workers have been brought to trial.

Appendix B

Dictionary-Based Definitions for the Concept of Ideology

Note: In what follows I list a series of dictionary-based definitions of ideology. I do not intend to supply a handy tool-kit to be used, but rather to introduce the concept of ideology from its denotative perspective. In doing so, I expect to provide the most common definitions for the readership and, more importantly, a springboard from which further investigation may develop.

ideologia (id). [De *ideo-* + *-logia*.] *S. f.* 1. Ciência da formação das idéias; tratado das idéias em abstrato; sistema de idéias. 2. *Filos.* Conjunto articulado de idéias, valores, opiniões, crenças, etc., que expressam e reforçam as relações que conferem unidade a determinado grupo social (classe, partido político, seita religiosa, etc.) seja qual for o grau de consciência que disso tenham seus portadores. 3. *Polit.* Sistema de idéias dogmaticamente organizado como um instrumento de luta política. 4. Conjunto de idéias próprias de um grupo, de uma época, e que traduzem uma situação histórica:  *ideologia burguesa*. (Anjos e Ferreira, 1999, p. 1072).

ideology /aɪdɪˈɒlədʒi/ ideologies. An ideology is a set of beliefs, especially the political beliefs on which people, parties, or countries base their actions. ...*capitalist ideology*. (Sinclair, 1995, p. 833).

ideology /aɪdɪˈɒlədʒi/, ideologies. An ideology is a belief or a set of beliefs, especially the political beliefs on which people, parties, or countries base their actions. EG ...*the capitalist ideology of the West*... ...*comrades with whom I could share a common ideology*... ...*the conflict between ideology and practice*. (Sinclair, 1990b, p. 718).

i-de-oleo-gy, n. [Fr. *Idéologie*; Gr. *idea*, an idea, and *-logia*, from *legein*, to speak.] 1. the study of ideas, their nature and source. 2. the theory that all ideas are derived exclusively through sensation. 3. thinking, speculating, or theorizing, especially when the theory or system of theories is idealistic, abstract, idle, impractical, or farfetched. 4. the doctrines, opinions, or way of thinking of an individual, class, etc. (McKechnie, 1968, p. 902).

i-de-ol-o-gy (i'dē ol 'ə jē, id'ē-), *n.*, *pl.*, -gies. 1. the body of doctrine, myth, symbol, etc., of a social movement, institution, class, or large group. 2. such a body of doctrine, myth, etc., with reference to some political and cultural plan, as that of fascism, along with the devices for putting it into operation. 3. *Philos.* a. the study of the nature and origin of ideas, b. a system which derives ideas exclusively from sensation. 4. theorizing of a visionary or impractical nature. [IDEO- + -LOGY; cf. F idéologie] (Stein, 1970, p. 707).

ideology /aɪdɪ'blɒdʒi, -ɪd/ *n.* (*pl.* -ies) 1 the system of ideas at the basis of an economic or political theory (*Marxist ideology*). 2 the manner of thinking characteristic of a class or individual (*bourgeois ideology*). 3 visionary speculation. 4 *archaic* the science of ideas. (*Concise Oxford Dictionary - CD-ROM.*, 1995)

i.de.ol.o.gy /aɪdɪ'blɒdʒi || -'ɑ:lə- / *n* [C;U] *sometimes derog* a set of ideas, esp. one on which a political or economic system is based: *Marxist ideology* | *the free market ideology of the extreme right* -ogical /aɪdɪ'blɒdʒɪkəl ◀ || -'lɑ:-/ *adj* -ogically /kli/ *adv*: *Ideologically, they have many differences.* | *As a socialist, I don't feel that buying shares in companies sold off by the government is ideologically sound.* (*Longman Interactive English Dictionary - CD-ROM.*, 1993)

ideology (aɪdɪ'blɒdʒi) *n* a set of ideas, esp. those of a political or economic system. ideological *adj* < Greek *ideo-*, from *idea* pattern + *-logy*, ultimately *logos* word. (Manser and Turton, 1987, p. 345)

Appendix C

Table 1
Lexical Choice in the
1999-2000 *Folha de S. Paulo* Corpus

Words/Phrases	Definitions in Houaiss & Villar (2001)
ameaçar	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Fazer ameaças a; meter medo a 2. Prometer (algo mau); anunciar castigo, dano, prejuízo 4. Colocar em perigo; prejudicar <p style="text-align: right;">(p. 185)</p>
atacar	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Executar uma ação ofensiva; efetuar um ataque; investir 2. Usar de agressão física contra; golpear ou morder, como intuito de ferir ou matar 3. Lançar injúrias contra; ofender 4. Reprovar moralmente; censurar, criticar <p style="text-align: right;">(p. 329)</p>
deprestar	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Executar a destruição, o devastamento de; assolar, arrasas, arruinar 2. Praticar o roubo de; saquear, furtar, espoliar <p style="text-align: right;">(p. 943)</p>
desacatar	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Não guardar o respeito devido a; tratar com indelicadeza ou irreverência 2. Não fazer caso de; desobedecer, menosprezar <p style="text-align: right;">(p. 948)</p>
despejar	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 2. Desvencilhar(-se), livrar(-se) de impedimentos, estorvos, ou obstáculos 3. Deixar de ocupar, desocupar, evacuar 4. Mover, diligenciar o despejo de; fazer sair 5. Sair da casa, do lugar onde habita 6. Fazer sair por castigo ou com violência; expulsar <p style="text-align: right;">(pp. 1009-1010)</p>
deter	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Fazer parar ou parar 2. Fazer demorar ou demorar 3. Não manifestar(-se); conter(-se); reprimir(-se) 4. Tornar vagaroso; delongar, adiar 5. Conservar em seu poder; reter 6. Não comunicar; delongar 8. Reter em seu poder; ter a posse legítima ou ilegítima de alguma coisa; prender, suster <p style="text-align: right;">(p. 1022)</p>
interditar	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Impedir ou proibir o funcionamento ou a utilização de, ou acesso a 2. Impedir a locomoção de; apreender 3. Impedir ou proibir a realização de; interdizer <p style="text-align: right;">(p. 1633)</p>
invadir	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Penetrar num determinado lugar e ocupá-lo pela força; apoderar-se, tomar, conquistar; ocupar um lugar de forma maciça e abusiva 2. Alastra-se por, estender-se por; ganhar, dominar 3. Infestar, cobrir (algo) 4. Tomar conta de; avassalar; usurpar <p style="text-align: right;">(p. 1642)</p>

militar	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Seguir carreira nas forças armadas 2. Participar de guerra; combater, lutar 4. Lutar ativamente em favor de uma idéia ou causa 6. Ter força; vigorar, prevalecer 	(p. 1923)
ocupar	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 2. Instalar-se em (um lugar conquistado pela força ou sem autorização) 3. Submeter (um território); dominar 	(p. 2049)
perambular	Andar sem destino; vaguear	(p. 2183)
peregrinar	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Andar em peregrinação por; ir em romaria 2. Andar por (terras distantes); viajar 	(p. 2185-2186)
protestar	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Demonstrar repulsa ou revolta contra (alguma coisa ou alguém); insurgir-se, reclamar 2. Efetuar ato de protesto (passeata, comício, etc.) 3. Demonstrar discordância com (afirmação de outrem) 	(p. 2318)
provocar	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Forçar (alguém) a responder a um desafio; desafiar 2. Tentar despertar em (alguém) a vontade de fazer (algo); convidar, incitar, desafiar 3. Impelir (alguém) a (algo); estimular, incitar, instigar 5. Fazer perder a calma; irritar, perturbar 6. Dizer desaforos; insultar 	(p. 2322)
queimar	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Destruir pelo fogo; fazer em cinzas; abrasar 2. Pôr fogo a ou pegar fogo; incendiar(-se) 9. Disparar (arma de fogo) contra; atirar em 10. Ferir ou matar (com arma de fogo) 11. Destruir ou desgastar moralmente; falar mal de; atacar duramente 	(p. 2352)
radicalizar	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Tornar(-se) radical, drástico, inflexível; adotar postura, ponto de vista etc. extremado em relação a (algo) 	(p. 2374)
recrutar	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Reunir, convocar, alistar (pessoal para determinado fim) <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1.1. Convocar para o serviço militar 2. Atrair (elementos) para um sociedade, um partido etc. 3. Arrebanhar, reunir 	(p. 2405)
reivindicar	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Intentar demanda para reaver (o que está na posse de outrem) 2. Tentar reaver, readquirir, recuperar 3. Requerer (algo sobre o qual se tem direito); solicitar <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 3.1. Reclamar (uma classe, um grupo social) o exercício de um direito político ou social, um melhoramento das condições de vida ou de trabalho 3.2. Pedir ou solicitar (algo) com vigor, como se tivesse o direito de fazê-lo 	(p. 2420)
saquear	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Cometer saque, apossar-se com violência; pilhar 2. Apoderar-se ilicitamente de; roubar 3. Pôr por terra; assolar, devastar 	(p. 2519)
tomar	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Tirar (algo) de (alguém) e apossar-se desse algo; subtrair, arrebatat, usurpar 2. Promover a conquista ou a invasão de 3. Realizar apreensão ou a prisão de; apoderar-se de; capturar 	(p. 2731)

Table 2

Lexical Choice in the
1999-2000 *The Guardian/The Observer* Corpus

Words/Phrases	Definitions in <i>Longman Interactive English Dictionary - CD-ROM</i> . (1993)
to benefit	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. (esp. of an action or event) to be useful, profitable, or helpful to 2. to gain advantage; receive benefit (as a result of something)
to clash	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. to be in opposition or come into opposition
to collapse	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. to fall down or inwards suddenly as a result of pressure or loss of strength or support 2. to fall helpless or unconscious 3. to fail suddenly and completely; break down
to criminalise	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. to cause to become a criminal
to demonstrate	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 4. to take part in a public show of strong feeling or opinion, often with marching, big signs, etc
to erode	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. to wear or be worn away gradually, esp. by the slow action of water, wind, etc
to fight	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. to use physical violence against (as if) in a battle 2. to quarrel 3. to take part in (a war, battle, etc.)
to gain	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. to obtain (something useful, advantageous, wanted, profitable, etc.) 3. to reduce the distance between oneself and the person or thing one is chasing 5. to reach (a place), esp. with effort or difficulty
to invade	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. to go or come into and attack, so as to take control of (a country, city, etc.) 2. <i>derog</i> to enter into and spoil

to loot	1. to steal, esp. in large quantities, and often causing widespread damage
to mobilise	1. to prepare for war or a difficult situation by organizing 2. (of armed forces) to gather together and become ready for war
to occupy	1. to move into and hold possession of (a place), e.g. by military force 2. to fill (a position, space, or time) 3. to be in (a place) 4. to cause to spend time (doing something); keep busy
to prosper	1. to become successful and esp. rich 2. to develop favourably or in a healthy way; grow well 3. <i>old use</i> to cause to succeed
to protest	1. to express one's disagreement, feeling of unfairness, annoyance, etc. 2. to declare in complaint or opposition 3. <i>AmE</i> to make a protest against
to resist	1. to oppose; fight against (something) 2. to remain unchanged or unharmed by 3. [<i>usu. in negatives</i>] to force or allow oneself not to accept
to revolutionise	1. to cause a complete change in; cause a REVOLUTION
to secure	3. to get, esp. as the result of effort 4. to give a legal promise that (something) will be paid back
to settle	A. 1. to place (someone or oneself) so as to be comfortable 3. to make or become quiet, calm, still, etc. 5. to end (an argument, esp. in law); bring (a matter) to an agreement 6. (of people) to go and live in (a place) 7. to start to live in a place B 2. to establish a home and live a quiet life 4. to start giving one's serious or whole attention to a job, activity, etc. C 2. to give (money, property, etc.) to (a person) formally in law
to squat	2. to live in an empty building without owning it, paying rent, or getting permission 3. <i>AmE</i> to settle on public or government-owned land in the hope of owning it some day. This was esp. formerly when people were first settling in the western part of the US
to storm	1. to attack with sudden violence 2. to go with violent anger
to struggle	1. to make violent movements, esp. when fighting against a stronger person or thing 2. to make great efforts, esp. when trying to deal with a difficult problem or situation

Appendix D

Table 1 – The Corpus

	<i>The Guardian / The Observer</i>		<i>Folha de S. Paulo</i>	
	1999 January - August	2000 January - May	1999 June - November	2000 January - August
Text #1	Promiscdlands	'Today the person who can't read is nothing'	MST invade fazenda de irmão do governador Dante de Oliveira	Ato do MST acaba em conflito em PE
Date	Wednesday January 6, 1999	Monday January 31, 2000	Thursday June 17, 1999	Friday January 28, 2000
Words	1090 words	1.011 words	352 words	355 words
Text #2	Rousseau revisited by Alternative Davos	Law star returns to defend squatter leader	Unicamp ajuda MST a formar 'líderes'	Sem-terra urbanos completam um ano
Date	Monday February 1, 1999	Monday April 3, 2000	Tuesday July 6, 1999	Sunday February 6, 2000
Words	492 words	327 words	607 words	512 words
Text #3	High pressure	Landless movement tries for a remake	Em SP, UDR eleva tom contra o MST	MST anuncia 65 invasões em 5 Estados
Date	Wednesday February 3, 1999	Monday April 3, 2000	Monday August 16, 1999	Tuesday April 18, 2000
Words	583 words	787 words	430 words	623 words
Text #4	Making a life from the ground up	Victory for landless movement	Sem-terra tentam saquear mercado	Festa não é convite a 'velório', diz FHC
Date	Thursday May 20, 1999	Friday April 7, 2000	Wednesday September 15, 1999	Thursday April 20, 2000
Words	801 words	287 words	373 words	521 words
Text #5	150 policemen on trial for massacre of Brazilian peasants	Brazil's landless to spoil big day	Com verba pública, MST dá aula a 100 mil	Assentamentos rurais sofrem favelização
Date	Tuesday August 17, 1999	Friday April 21, 2000	Monday October 11, 1999	Sunday June 25, 2000
Words	488 words	405 words	667 words	600 words
Text #6	Officers 'guilty' of massacre go free	Stakes rise in Brazil's land battle	Evento reunirá zapatistas, Farc e MST & Lema do EZLN é 'terra e liberdade'	Reunião do MST prega invasão e queimada
Date	Friday August 20, 1999	Tuesday May 9, 2000	Monday November 8, 1999	Saturday August 12, 2000
Words	336 words	664 words	651 words	397 words
Sub-totals	3.790 words	3.481 words	3.080 words	3.008 words
Totals	7.271 words		6.088 words	

Table 2

Folha de S. Paulo and other Brazilian quality papers compared

Brazilian National Mainstream Quality Papers

Title*	Overall Total Average Net Circulation**
O Estado de São Paulo	Not available
Folha de S. Paulo	447,620
Gazeta Mercantil	Not available
Jornal do Brasil	Not available
Jornal da Tarde	Not available
O Globo	Not available

*Information collected on 12 April 2001 from The World Press at <http://www.theworldpress.com/ru/brazil.htm>

**Information collected on 12 April 2001 from the newspapers' hard editions

Table 3

The Guardian/The Observer and other British quality papers compared

British National Mainstream Quality Papers

National Morning Quality*

Title	Overall Total Average Net Circulation
The Daily Telegraph	1,010,620
Financial Times	476,341
The Guardian	396,886
The Independent	223,958
The Scotsman	91,616
The Times	723,228

National Sunday Quality*

Title	Overall Total Average Net Circulation
Independent on Sunday	251,124
The Observer	443,198
Scotland on Sunday	102,254
Sunday Business	53,571
The Sunday Telegraph	805,385
The Sunday Times	1,394,381

*Information collected on 12 April 2001 from the on-line Audit Bureau of Circulation at <http://www.abc.org.uk/cgi-bin/gen5?runprog=abc&noc=y&type=>

Appendix E

Corpus Analysed for Transitivity and Theme

1999-2000

Folha de S. Paulo

and

The Guardian/The Observer

Corpus

Folha de S. Paulo

1999

Text #1

QUESTÃO AGRÁRIA-1 *Empresário diz que a área é produtiva e vai à justiça*

MST invade fazenda de irmão do governador Dante de Oliveira

RUBENS VALENTE
da Agência Folha, em Campo Grande

[1] Cerca de mil famílias ligadas ao MST invadiram duas fazendas em Mato Grosso, uma delas pertencente ao empresário Armando Martins de Oliveira, irmão do governador Dante de Oliveira (PSDB).

[2] Altamiro Stochero, da direção estadual do MST (Movimento dos Trabalhadores Rurais Sem Terra), disse que a invasão da fazenda de Oliveira não foi "proposita" e ocorreu porque o imóvel estaria "absolutamente abandonado e improdutivo".

[3] A fazenda Araguari, em Araputanga (cerca de 150 km a oeste de Cuiabá), de 2.025 hectares, foi invadida anteontem por cerca de 700 famílias. A propriedade está registrada em nome da Amper Construções Elétricas, cujo único proprietário é o irmão do governador.

[4] A empresa foi a maior doadora da última campanha eleitoral de Dante de Oliveira, no ano passado, com contribuições que somaram cerca de R\$ 250 mil.

[5] A fazenda foi adquirida em dezembro de 95, 11 meses depois do governador tomar posse no seu primeiro mandato.

[6] O empresário entrou ontem mesmo com um pedido de reintegração de posse no fórum de Araputanga, a cerca de 150 km a oeste de Cuiabá. A justiça não havia decidido sobre o pedido até as 17h de ontem.

[7] No pedido de reintegração, o empresário alega que o imóvel foi considerado produtivo pelo Inera (Instituto Nacional de Colonização e Reforma Agrária). Ele disse que planta milho e cria na fazenda cerca de 3.000 cabeças de gado com uso "de alta tecnologia".

[8] A outra invasão, também anteontem, ocorreu na fazenda Sino de Belém, em Cuiabá, por cerca de 300 famílias.

[9] Com as duas invasões, subiu para 2.000 o número de famílias ligadas ao MST acampadas em Mato Grosso, em quatro fazendas.

[10] A invasão da fazenda Santa Maria, de 2.000 hectares, em Rio Branco, foi solucionada provisoriamente, com um acordo que prevê a transferência das 700 famílias para uma área vizinha.

[11] Os proprietários da Santa Maria conseguiram um mandado de reintegração de posse, cujo cumprimento, pela Polícia Militar, foi evitado em virtude do acordo.

Text #1

MST invade fazenda de irmão do governador Dante de Oliveira

[1] Cerca de mil famílias ligadas ao MST invadiram duas fazendas em Mato Grosso, uma delas pertencente ao empresário Armando Martins de Oliveira, irmão do governador Dante de Oliveira (PSDB).

[Text 1 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 1]

Cerca de mil famílias ligadas ao MST	invadiram	duas fazendas	em Mato Grosso
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 2]

Uma delas	[pertence]	ao empresário Armando Martins de Oliveira
Attribute	Relational	Carrier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 3]

[O empresário Armando Martins de Oliveira]	é	irmão do governador Dante de Oliveira (PSDB)
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[2] Altamiro Stochero, da direção estadual do MST (Movimento dos Trabalhadores Rurais Sem Terra), disse que a invasão da fazenda de Oliveira não foi “proposita” e ocorreu porque o imóvel estaria “absolutamente abandonado e improdutivo”.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 4]

Altamiro Stochero, (...)	disse	que a invasão da fazenda de Oliveira não foi “proposita”
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 4a]

[Altamiro Stochero]	[disse]	[que a invasão] (...) ocorreu porque o imóvel estaria “absolutamente (...)”
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 5]

[Altamiro Stochero]	[é]	da direção estadual do MST
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[3] A fazenda Araguari, em Araputanga (cerca de 150 km a oeste de Cuiabá), de 2.025 hectares, foi invadida antontem por cerca de 700 famílias. A propriedade está registrada em nome da Amper Construções Elétricas, cujo único proprietário é o irmão do governador.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 6]

A fazenda Araguari,	em Araputanga (...)	foi invadida	antontem	por cerca de 700 famílias
Goal	Circumstance	Material	Circumstance	Actor
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 7]

A propriedade	está registrada	em nome da Amper Construções Elétricas
Goal	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 8]

[O] único proprietário	é	o irmão do governador	
Identified	Relational	Identifier	
Theme	Rheme		

[4] A empresa foi a maior doadora da última campanha eleitoral de Dante de Oliveira, no ano passado, com contribuições que somaram cerca de R\$ 250 mil.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 9]

A empresa	foi	a maior doadora	da última campanha eleitoral de Dante de Oliveira
Identified	Relational	Identifier	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 10]

[As] contribuições (...)	somaram	cerca de R\$ 250 mil	
Identified	Relational	Identifier	
Theme	Rheme		

[5] A fazenda foi adquirida em dezembro de 95, 11 meses depois do governador tomar posse no seu primeiro mandato.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 11]

A fazenda	foi adquirida	em dezembro de 95	
Goal	Material	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 11a]

[A fazenda]	[foi adquirida]	11 meses depois do governador tomar posse no seu primeiro mandato	
Goal	Material	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme		

[6] O empresário entrou ontem mesmo com um pedido de reintegração de posse no fórum de Araputanga, a cerca de 150 km a oeste de Cuiabá. A justiça não havia decidido sobre o pedido até as 17h de ontem.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 12]

O empresário	entrou	ontem mesmo	com um pedido de (...)	no fórum de Araputanga, a cerca de (...)
Actor	Material	Circumstance	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 13]

A justiça	não havia decidido	sobre o pedido até as 17h de ontem.		
Actor	Material	Circumstance		

[7] No pedido de reintegração, o empresário alega que o imóvel foi considerado produtivo pelo Inbra (Instituto Nacional de Colonização e Reforma Agrária). Ele disse que planta milho e cria na fazenda cerca de 3.000 cabeças de gado com uso "de alta tecnologia".

[Text 1 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 14]

No pedido de reintegração,	o empresário	alega	que o imóvel foi considerado produtivo pelo Inbra (...)	
Circumstance	Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage	
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 15]

Ele	disse	que planta milho e cria na fazenda cerca de 3.000 cabeças de gado com uso "de alta (...) "		
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage		
Theme	Rheme			

[8] A outra invasão, também antecorem, ocorreu na fazenda Sino de Belém, em Cuiabá, por cerca de 300 famílias.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 16]

A outra invasão,	também antecorem,	ocorreu	na fazenda Sino de Belém, em Cuiabá	
Actor	Circumstance	Material	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 17]

[A fazenda Sino de Belém]	[foi invadida]	por cerca de 300 famílias.		
Goal	Material	Actor		
Theme	Rheme			

[9] Com as duas invasões, subiu para 2.000 o número de famílias ligadas ao MST acampadas em Mato Grosso, em quatro fazendas.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 18]

Com as duas invasões,	subiu	para 2.000	o número de famílias	ligadas ao MST acampadas (...)
Circumstance	Material	Circumstance	Actor	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[10] A invasão da fazenda Santa Maria, de 2.000 hectares, em Rio Branco, foi solucionada provisoriamente, com um acordo que prevê a transferência das 700 famílias para uma área vizinha.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 19]

A invasão da fazenda Santa Maria, de 2.000 hectares, em Rio Branco,	foi solucionada			
Goal	Material			
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 20]

Um acordo (...)	prevê	a transferência das 700 famílias para uma área vizinha		
Senser	Mental	Phenomenon		
Theme	Rheme			

[11] Os proprietários da Santa Maria conseguiram um mandado de reintegração de posse, cujo cumprimento, pela Polícia Militar, foi evitado em virtude do acordo.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 21]

Os proprietários da Santa Maria	conseguiram	um mandado de reintegração de posse		
Actor	Material	Goal		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 22]

[O] cumprimento [do mandado],	pela Polícia Militar,	foi evitado	em virtude do acordo	
Goal	Actor	Material	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme			

Text #1

MST invade fazenda de irmão do governador Dante de Oliveira

TOTALS

Total number of words in the text:	352 words
Total number of clauses analysed in the text:	22 clauses
Total number of occurrences of process types:	
Material:	12 Material Processes
Mental:	01 Mental Processes
Relational:	06 Relational Processes
Behavioural:	00 Behavioural Processes
Verbal:	03 Verbal Processes
Existential:	00 Existential Processes

Text #2

QUESTÃO AGRÁRIA *Universidade, ligada ao governo paulista, paga alimentação e hospedagem para 1.200 jovens***Unicamp ajuda MST a formar 'líderes'**

PATRÍCIA ANDRADE
enviada especial a Campinas

GUSTAVO PORTO
free-lance para a Folha Campinas

[1] A Unicamp, (Universidade Estadual de Campinas) dividiu com o MST (Movimento dos Trabalhadores Rurais Sem Terra) os custos para a realização do primeiro curso de formação para novos líderes de assentamentos e de ações como invasões de terra.

[2] A universidade, autarquia que recebe verbas orçamentárias do governo tucano de Mário Covas, está pagando a alimentação e o alojamento para 1.200 jovens entre 12 e 25 anos, selecionados por lideranças de áreas invadidas e assentamentos.

[3] O MST, por sua vez, pagou as viagens dos alunos, oriundos de 22 Estados. Nem o movimento nem a Unicamp divulgaram os gastos totais do encontro.

[4] Os escolhidos pelo MST foram aqueles considerados "líderes em potencial".

[5] O curso, que terá a duração de dez dias, começou na última sexta-feira, mas um de seus pontos altos aconteceu ontem com a aula do principal ideólogo do movimento, João Pedro Stedile, que abordou a história da reforma agrária no Brasil e no mundo.

[6] Em tom professoral, Stedile falou para a platéia de jovens durante mais de duas horas. Em sua exposição, deu sua versão da história da reforma agrária no mundo e no Brasil. Disse que o termo "reforma agrária não foi invenção dos camponeses e sim da burguesia".

[7] "Essa expressão surgiu no final do século passado na Europa Ocidental. O capitalismo industrial se desenvolvia à custa da exploração dos operários, mas chegou um momento em que começou a faltar mercado para os produtos feitos pelas fábricas. E por quê? Porque os trabalhadores rurais não tinham dinheiro, não tinham terra. Então, a própria burguesia propôs uma divisão de terras e inventou o termo reforma agrária", afirmou o líder do MST.

[8] Stedile citou casos de países que já realizaram reforma agrária, elogiou o norte-americano Abraham Lincoln (1809-1865), "o primeiro grande presidente dos EUA, um filho de camponeses que distribuiu terra aos agricultores."

[9] O líder do MST também falou sobre as chamadas "reformas agrárias revolucionárias", realizadas em países como o México, sob o comando de Emiliano Zapata (1879?- 1919), e na Bolívia.

[10] Stedile deu explicações sobre o que chamou de "movimentos camponeses messiânicos", como o de Canudos, ocorrido no final do século passado no sertão da Bahia, sob o comando de Antônio Conselheiro (1830-97).

[11] Citou o presidente João Goulart (1908-76) como um dos pioneiros da reforma agrária no país e disse que o regime militar (1964-85) "massacrôu os camponeses brasileiros".

[12] Antes de ouvirem Stedile, os estudantes sem terra assistiram a performances sobre os massacres de trabalhadores rurais e vaiaram um jovem que se vestiu estrategicamente com a bandeira norte americana.

[13] Em seguinte, vieram as palavras de ordem: "Fora já! Fora daqui! O FHC e o FMI (Fundo Monetário Internacional)!".

[14] A intenção do MST, ao realizar seminários desse tipo, é investir cada vez mais em novas lideranças. "Esse curso é o primeiro dessa natureza. O objetivo é criar oportunidades para que os jovens pobres, filhos de camponeses, tenham acesso aos conhecimentos científicos sobre a realidade brasileira", afirmou Stedile.

[15] Adelar João Pizetta, coordenador de formação do MST, afirma que é preciso mobilizar mais os jovens do movimento, tentar fazer com que eles não queiram abandonar o campo em direção às cidades.

[16] Segundo ele, nos centros urbanos os jovens "acabam se marginalizando".

[17] "Os jovens têm um importante papel na organização do movimento. A luta não é só do pai dele. O jovem tem que participar da organização do assentamento, da produção, tem de ensinar os outros a ler e a escrever e precisa permanecer no campo", disse Pizetta.

Folha de São Paulo
Terça-feira, 6 de julho de 1999
Brasil 1-6

Text #2

Unicamp ajuda MST a formar 'líderes'

[1] A Unicamp, (Universidade Estadual de Campinas) dividiu com o MST (Movimento dos Trabalhadores Rurais Sem Terra) os custos para a realização do primeiro curso de formação para novos líderes de assentamentos e de ações como invasões de terra.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 1]

A Unicamp, (...)	dividiu	com o MST (...)	os custos	para a realização do primeiro curso de (...)
Actor	Material	Circumstance	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[2] A universidade, autarquia que recebe verbas orçamentárias do governo tucano de Mário Covas, está pagando a alimentação e o alojamento para 1.200 jovens entre 12 e 25 anos, seleccionados por lideranças de áreas invadidas e assentamentos.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 2]

A universidade, (...)	está pagando	a alimentação e o alojamento	para 1.200 jovens entre 12 e 25 anos
Actor	Material	Goal	Beneficiary
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 2 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 3]

[A universidade,]	recebe	verbas orçamentárias	do governo tucano de Mário Covas
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 2 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 4]

[Os jovens]	[foram] seleccionados	por lideranças de áreas invadidas e assentamentos
Goal	Material	Actor
Theme	Rheme	

[3] O MST, por sua vez, pagou as viagens dos alunos, oriundos de 22 Estados. Nem o movimento nem a Unicamp divulgaram os gastos totais do encontro.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 5]

O MST, (...)	pagou	as viagens	dos alunos, oriundos de 22 Estados
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 2 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 6]

Nem o movimento nem a Unicamp	divulgaram	os gastos totais do encontro.
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[4] Os escolhidos pelo MST foram aqueles considerados "líderes em potencial".

[Text 2 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 7]

Os escolhidos pelo MST	foram	aqueles considerados "líderes em potencial"
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[5] O curso, que terá a duração de dez dias, começou na última sexta-feira, mas um de seus pontos altos aconteceu ontem com a aula do principal ideólogo do movimento, João Pedro Stedile, que abordou a história da reforma agrária no Brasil e no mundo.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 8]

O curso, (...) começou na última sexta-feira		
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 9]

[O curso] terá a duração de dez dias		
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 10]

Um de seus pontos altos aconteceu ontem com a aula do principal ideólogo do movimento		
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 11]

[O principal ideólogo do movimento] [é] [João Pedro Stedile]		
Identifier	Relational	Identified
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 12]

[João Pedro Stedile] abordou a história da reforma agrária no Brasil e no mundo		
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[6] Em tom professoral, Stedile falou para a platéia de jovens durante mais de duas horas. Em sua exposição, deu sua versão da história da reforma agrária no mundo e no Brasil. Disse que o termo “reforma agrária não foi invenção dos camponeses e sim da burguesia”.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 13]

Em tom professoral, Stedile falou para a platéia de jovens durante mais de duas horas				
Circumstance	Sayer	Verbal	Receiver	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 2 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 14]

Em sua exposição, deu sua versão da história da reforma agrária no mundo e no Brasil			
Circumstance	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 2 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 15]

Disse que o termo “reforma agrária não foi invenção dos camponeses e sim da burguesia”	
Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme

[7] “Essa expressão surgiu no final do século passado na Europa Ocidental. O capitalismo industrial se desenvolvia à custa da exploração dos operários, mas chegou um momento em que começou a faltar mercado para os produtos feitos pelas fábricas. E por quê? Porque os trabalhadores rurais não tinham dinheiro, não tinham terra. Então, a própria burguesia propôs uma divisão de terras e inventou o termo reforma agrária”, afirmou o líder do MST.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 16]

“Essa expressão surgiu no final do século passado na Europa Ocidental”			[afirmou]	[o líder to MST]
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 2 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 16a]

“O capitalismo industrial se desenvolvia à custa da exploração dos operários, (...)”			[afirmou]	[o líder to MST]
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 2 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 16b]

“Porque os trabalhadores rurais não tinham dinheiro, não tinham terra”			[afirmou]	[o líder to MST]
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 2 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 16c]

“Então, a própria burguesia propôs uma divisão de terras e inventou o termo (...)”			afirmou	o líder to MST
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer		
Theme	Rheme			

[8] Stedile citou casos de países que já realizaram reforma agrária, elogiou o norte-americano Abraham Lincoln (1809-1865), “o primeiro grande presidente dos EUA, um filho de camponeses que distribuiu terra aos agricultores.”

[Text 2 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 17]

Stedile	citou	casos de países que já realizaram reforma agrária		
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 2 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 18]

[Stedile] (...)	clogiou	o norte-americano Abraham Lincoln (1809-1865)		
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 2 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 19]

[Stedile] (...)	[disse]	[que Abraham Lincoln foi]	“o primeiro grande presidente dos EUA”	
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 2 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 19a]

[Stedile]	[disse]	[que Abraham Lincoln foi]	“um filho de camponeses que distribuiu terra aos agricultores”	
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage		
Theme	Rheme			

[9] O líder do MST também falou sobre as chamadas “reformas agrárias revolucionárias”, realizadas em países como o México, sob o comando de Emiliano Zapata (1879?- 1919), e na Bolívia.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 20]

O líder do MST (...) falou sobre as chamadas “reformas agrárias revolucionárias”		
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 21]

[As reformas agrárias revolucionárias] [foram] realizadas em países como o México (...) e na Bolívia.		
Goal	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 22]

[As reformas agrárias] [foram] realizadas [no] México, sob o comando de Emiliano Zapata (1879?-1919)		
Goal	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[10] Stedile deu explicações sobre o que chamou de “movimentos camponeses messiânicos”, como o de Canudos, ocorrido no final do século passado no sertão da Bahia, sob o comando de Antônio Conselheiro (1830-97).

[Text 2 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 23]

Stedile deu explicações sobre o que chamou de “movimentos camponeses messiânicos”, como o de Canudos		
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 24]

[O movimento de Canudos] [ocorreu] no final do século passado no sertão da Bahia		
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 24a]

[O movimento de Canudos] [ocorreu] sob o comando de Antônio Conselheiro (1830-97).		
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[11] Citou o presidente João Goulart (1908-76) como um dos pioneiros da reforma agrária no país e disse que o regime militar (1964-85) “massacrrou os camponeses brasileiros”.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 25]

Citou o presidente João Goulart (1908-76) como um dos pioneiros da reforma agrária no país		
Verbal	Target	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 26]

Disse que o regime militar (1964-85) “massacrrou os camponeses brasileiros”		
Verbal	Verbiage	
Theme	Rheme	

[12] Antes de ouvirem Stedile, os estudantes sem terra assistiram a performances sobre os massacres de trabalhadores rurais e vaiaram um jovem que se vestiu estrategicamente com a bandeira norte americana.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 27]

Antes de ouvirem Stedile, os estudantes sem terra assistiram a performances sobre os massacres de (...)			
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 2 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 28]

[Os estudantes sem terra] vaiaram um jovem que se vestiu estrategicamente com a bandeira norte (...)			
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[13] Em seguinte, vieram as palavras de ordem: “Fora já! Fora daqui! O FHC e o FMI (Fundo Monetário Internacional)!”.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 29]

Em seguinte, vieram as palavras de ordem: “Fora já! Fora daqui! O FHC e o FMI (...)!”		
Circumstance	Material	Actor
Theme	Rheme	

[14] A intenção do MST, ao realizar seminários desse tipo, é investir cada vez mais em novas lideranças. “Esse curso é o primeiro dessa natureza. O objetivo é criar oportunidades para que os jovens pobres, filhos de camponeses, tenham acesso aos conhecimentos científicos sobre a realidade brasileira”, afirmou Stedile.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 30]

A intenção do MST, ao realizar seminários (...), é investir cada vez mais em novas lideranças				
Identified	Circumstance	Relational	Identifier	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 2 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 31]

“Esse curso é o primeiro dessa natureza” [afirmou] [Stedile]		
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 31a]

“O objetivo é criar oportunidades para que os jovens pobres, filhos de camponeses, tenham (...) afirmou Stedile		
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[15] Adelar João Pizetta, coordenador de formação do MST, afirma que é preciso mobilizar mais os jovens do movimento, tentar fazer com que eles não queiram abandonar o campo em direção às cidades.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 32]

[Adelar João Pizetta] [é] coordenador de formação do MST		
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 33]

Adelar João Pizetta, (...) afirma que é preciso mobilizar mais os jovens do movimento		
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 33a]

[Adelar João Pizetta]	[afirma]	[que é preciso]	tentar fazer com que eles não queiram abandonar o campo (...)
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage	
Theme	Rheme		

[16] Segundo ele, nos centros urbanos os jovens “acabam se marginalizando”.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 34]

Segundo ele, nos centros urbanos	os jovens	“acabam se marginalizando”	
Circumstance	Actor	Material	
Theme	Rheme		

[17] “Os jovens têm um importante papel na organização do movimento. A luta não é só do pai dele. O jovem tem que participar da organização do assentamento, da produção, tem de ensinar os outros a ler e a escrever e precisa permanecer no campo”, disse Pizetta.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 17 - Clause 35]

“Os jovens têm um importante papel na organização do movimento”	[disse]	[Pizetta]	
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 2 - Paragraph 17 - Clause 35a]

“A luta não é só do pai dele”	[disse]	[Pizetta]	
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 2 - Paragraph 17 - Clause 35b]

“O jovem tem que participar da organização do assentamento, da produção, tem de (...)”	disse	Pizetta	
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer	
Theme	Rheme		

Text #2

Unicamp ajuda MST a formar 'líderes'

TOTALS

Total number of words in the text: 607 words

Total number of clauses analysed in the text: 35 clauses

Total number of occurrences of process types:

Material: 16 Material Processes

Mental: 00 Mental Processes

Relational: 05 Relational Processes

Behavioural: 00 Behavioural Processes

Verbal: 14 Verbal Processes

Existential: 00 Existential Processes

Text #3

Em SP, UDR eleva tom contra o MST

ROBERTO COSSO
enviado especial a Presidente Prudente

[1] O caminhonço dos agricultores da região Sul, que deve chegar a Brasília hoje à noite, entrou no Estado de São Paulo no último sábado. O ingresso da UDR (União Democrática Ruralista) no movimento fez os discursos do protesto se voltarem contra os sem-terra de forma acentuada.

[2] O movimento dos produtores rurais pede solução pra três problemas: a falta de renda do setor, o desrespeito ao direito de propriedade e o endividamento agrícola.

[3] Para os agricultores, do Rio Grande do Sul, o endividamento é o maior problema.

[4] Já os de Santa Catarina dão mais ênfase para a necessidade de implementação de uma política de geração de renda para a agricultura. Segundo eles, essa política resolveria o problema dos proprietários de terra com o MST (Movimento dos Trabalhadores Rurais Sem Terra).

[5] Mas em São Paulo, a principal bandeira levantada foi a da defesa da propriedade privada. Em Presidente Prudente (SP), os membros da UDR traziam faixas contra o MST.

[6] Enquanto os agricultores gaúchos dizem que não são contra a reforma agrária e os catarinenses defendem a necessidade da distribuição da terra, os paulistas pedem a rediscussão dos assentamentos feitos no Pontal do Paranapanema (extremo oeste do Estado)

[7] Nabhan Garcia, diretor da UDR e coordenador do caminhonço em Presidente Prudente, afirma que o objetivo do movimento é obter "garantia de que as terras não vão ser invadidas". Segundo ele, têm sido frequentes as invasões de fazendas no Pontal.

[8] De acordo com o MST, contudo, há apenas dois acampamentos na região: o Padre Josino, em Presidente Bernardes (SP), com 200 famílias, e o de Fusquinho em Teodoro Sampaio (SP), com 100 famílias. Além disso, o MST argumenta que as terras invadidas no Pontal eram devolutas (do Estado).

'Tercerização'

[9] Mais uma vez, a maioria dos caminhões que engrossou o caminhonço em Presidente Prudente não era dirigida por produtores rurais. O fazendeiro Newton Teixeira, diretor da UDR, disse no sábado que os agricultores estavam mandando seus caminhões, mas que as lideranças iriam depois para Brasília, de ônibus.

[10] Um grande proprietário da região, que também é dono de um transportadora de combustíveis, colocou três caminhões-tanque para engrossar o "caminhonço".

[11] Em um dos caminhões estava pregada uma faixa com os seguintes dizeres: "Primeiro invadem minha terra, depois invadirão sua casa".

[12] Os agricultores saíram de Presidente Prudente com 350 caminhões. Hoje eles vão de Uberlândia (MG) até Brasília e pretendem chegar à capital federal com mais de 800 caminhões, em virtude de novas adesões de agricultores do Mato Grosso do Sul e de Minas.

Text #3

Em SP, UDR eleva tom contra o MST

[1] O caminhonão dos agricultores da região Sul, que deve chegar à Brasília hoje à noite, entrou no Estado de São Paulo no último sábado. O ingresso da UDR (União Democrática Ruralista) no movimento fez os discursos do protesto se voltarem contra os sem-terra de forma acentuada.

[Text 3 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 1]

O caminhonão dos agricultores da região Sul, (...)		entrou	no Estado de São Paulo no último sábado	
Actor		Material	Circumstance	
Theme		Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 2]

[O caminhonão dos agricultores da região Sul]		deve chegar	a Brasília hoje à noite	
Actor		Material	Circumstance	
Theme		Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 3]

O ingresso da UDR (...)	fez	os discursos do protesto		se voltarem	contra os sem-terra (...)
Agent	Causative	Actor		Material	Circumstance
Theme		Rheme			

[2] O movimento dos produtores rurais pede solução pra três problemas: a falta de renda do setor, o desrespeito ao direito de propriedade e o endividamento agrícola.

[Text 3 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 4]

O movimento dos produtores rurais		pede	solução pra três problemas: a falta de renda do setor, o (...)		
Sayer		Verbal	Verbiage		
Theme		Rheme			

[3] Para os agricultores, do Rio Grande do Sul, o endividamento é o maior problema.

[Text 3 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 5]

Para os agricultores do Rio Grande do Sul,		o endividamento	é	o maior problema	
Circumstance		Identified	Relational	Identifier	
Theme		Rheme			

[4] Já os de Santa Catarina dão mais ênfase para a necessidade de implementação de uma política de geração de renda para a agricultura. Segundo eles, essa política resolveria o problema dos proprietários de terra com o MST (Movimento dos Trabalhadores Rurais Sem Terra).

[Text 3 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 6]

Já os de Santa Catarina	dão mais ênfase	para a necessidade de implementação de uma política (...)			
Actor	Material	Beneficiary			
Theme		Rheme			

[Text 3 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 7]

Segundo eles,	essa política	resolveria	o problema dos proprietários de terra com o MST (...)		
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal		
Theme		Rheme			

[5] Mas em São Paulo, a principal bandeira levantada foi a da defesa da propriedade privada. Em Presidente Prudente (SP), os membros da UDR traziam faixas contra o MST.

[Text 3 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 8]

Mas em São Paulo,	a principal bandeira levantada	foi	a da defesa da propriedade privada
Circumstance	Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 9]

Em Presidente Prudente (SP),	os membros da UDR	traziam	faixas	contra o MST
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[6] Enquanto os agricultores gaúchos dizem que não são contra a reforma agrária e os catarinenses defendem a necessidade da distribuição da terra, os paulistas pedem a rediscussão dos assentamentos feitos no Pontal do Paranapanema (extremo oeste do Estado).

[Text 3 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 10]

Enquanto	os agricultores gaúchos	dizem	que não são contra a reforma agrária
	Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 11]

Os catarinenses	defendem	a necessidade da distribuição da terra, (...)
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 12]

Os paulistas	pedem	a rediscussão dos assentamentos feitos no Pontal do Paranapanema (...)
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[7] Nabhan Garcia, diretor da UDR e coordenador do caminhonaço em Presidente Prudente, afirma que o objetivo do movimento é obter "garantia de que as terra não vão ser invadidas". Segundo ele, têm sido frequentes as invasões de fazendas no Pontal.

[Text 3 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 13]

Nabhan Garcia, (...)	afirma	que o objetivo do movimento é obter "garantia de que as terra não vão (...)"
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 14]

[Nabhan Garcia]	[é]	diretor da UDR
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 14a]

[Nabhan Garcia]	[é]	coordenador do caminhonaço em Presidente Prudente, (...)
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 15]

Segundo ele,	têm sido	frequentes	as invasões de fazendas no Pontal
Circumstance	Relational	Attribute	Carrier
Theme	Rheme		

[8] De acordo com o MST, contudo, há apenas dois acampamentos na região: o Padre Josino, em Presidente Bernardes (SP), com 200 famílias, e o de Fusquinho em Teodoro Sampaio (SP), com 100 famílias. Além disso, o MST argumenta que as terras invadidas no Pontal eram devolutas (do Estado).

[Text 3 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 16]

De acordo com o MST, (...),	há	apenas dois acampamentos na região: o Padre Josino, (...)	
Circumstance	Existential	Existent	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 17]

O [acampamento] Padre Josino	em Presidente Bernardes (SP),	[tem]	200 famílias
Carrier	Circumstance	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 18]

O [acampamento] de Fusquinho	em Teodoro Sampaio (SP),	[tem]	100 famílias
Carrier	Circumstance	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 19]

Além disso,	o MST	argumenta	que as terras invadidas no Pontal eram devolutas (do Estado).
	Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme		

[9] Mais uma vez, a maioria dos caminhões que engrossou o caminhonaço em Presidente Prudente não era dirigida por produtores rurais. O fazendeiro Newton Teixeira, diretor da UDR, disse no sábado que os agricultores estavam mandando seus caminhões, mas que as lideranças iriam depois para Brasília, de ônibus.

[Text 3 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 20]

Mais uma vez,	a maioria dos caminhões que engrossou (...)	não era dirigida	por produtores rurais
	Goal	Material	Actor
Theme		Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 21]

O fazendeiro Newton Teixeira, (...)	disse	no sábado	que os agricultores estavam mandando seus (...)
Sayer	Verbal	Circumstance	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 22]

O fazendeiro Newton Teixeira	[é]	diretor da UDR	
Identified	Relational	Identifier	
Theme	Rheme		

[10] Um grande proprietário da região, que também é dono de um transportadora de combustíveis, colocou três caminhões-tanque para engrossar o “caminhonaço”.

[Text 3 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 23]

Um grande proprietário da região, (...) colocou três caminhões-tanque para engrossar o “caminhonaço”			
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme		Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 24]

[Um grande proprietário da região] é dono de um transportadora de combustíveis			
Carrier	Relational	Attribute	
Theme		Rheme	

[11] Em um dos caminhões estava pregada uma faixa com os seguintes dizeres: “Primeiro invadem minha terra, depois invadirão sua casa”.

[Text 3 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 25]

Em um dos caminhões estava pregada uma faixa com os seguintes dizeres: “Primeiro invadem minha (...)”			
Circumstance	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme		Rheme	

[12] Os agricultores saíram de Presidente Prudente com 350 caminhões. Hoje eles vão de Uberlândia (MG) até Brasília e pretendem chegar à capital federal com mais de 800 caminhões, em virtude de novas adesões de agricultores do Mato Grosso do Sul e de Minas.

[Text 3 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 26]

Os agricultores saíram de Presidente Prudente com 350 caminhões			
Actor	Material	Circumstance	
Theme		Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 27]

Hoje eles vão de Uberlândia (MG) até Brasília			
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme		Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 28]

[Eles] pretendem chegar à capital federal com mais de 800 caminhões, em virtude de novas adesões de (...)			
Actor	Material	Circumstance	
Theme		Rheme	

Text #3

Em SP, UDR eleva tom contra o MST

TOTALS

Total number of words in the text:	430 words
Total number of clauses analysed in the text:	28 clauses
Total number of occurrences of process types:	
Material:	13 Material Processes
Mental:	00 Mental Processes
Relational:	08 Relational Processes
Behavioural:	00 Behavioural Processes
Verbal:	06 Verbal Processes
Existential:	01 Existential Processes

Text #4

ALAGOAS Supermercado Bompreço faz doação de alimentos e evita ação de trabalhadores rurais ligados ao MST

Sem-terra tentam saquear mercado

ARI CIPOLA
da Agência Folha, em Macció

- [1] Um grupo de sem-terra ligado ao MST tentou saquear ontem a loja de um dos maiores grupos de supermercados do Nordeste, o Bompreço, no centro de Macció (AL).
- [2] O saque só foi evitado porque a diretoria da empresa conseguiu negociar com os cerca de 1.200 trabalhadores rurais.
- [3] Após 40 minutos de ameaças de invasão, o MST aceitou a proposta do Bompreço.
- [4] Foi acertado que o supermercado iria doar 500 quilos de alimentos para os trabalhadores rurais – feijão, arroz, macarrão, carne-de-sol, óleo e farinha de milho.
- [5] Os sem-terra estão em Macció desde o último dia 7, quando participaram do protesto “Grito dos Excluídos”. Eles querem a liberação de 7.200 cestas básicas para as famílias acampadas no Estado e denunciam que há três meses não recebem alimentos do governo federal.

Novos saques

- [6] “Amanhã temos uma reunião com o Incra (Instituto Nacional de Colonização e Reforma Agrária) e, caso nossos pedidos não sejam atendidos, vamos voltar a fazer saques”, afirmou o coordenador do MST (Movimento dos Trabalhadores Rurais Sem Terra) em Alagoas, Marco Antônio da Silva, o Marrom.
- [7] O superintendente do Incra, Ricardo Vitorio, afirmou que os problemas com o MST devem ser solucionados hoje.

Policiamento

- [8] Diante das ameaças dos trabalhadores do MST, o comando da Polícia Militar do Estado determinou rondas de duas em duas horas nos supermercados da capital alagoana.
- [9] A PM participou da negociação para impedir o saque ontem no Bompreço.
- [10] A direção do supermercado não divulgou o custo da doação que fez para impedir o saque.
- [11] “Entendemos que há um problema político, mas sabemos que há fome entre os sem-terra”, afirmou o diretor regional do Bompreço, Marco Aurélio Feitosa.
- [12] “A negociação impediu a depredação da loja e o pânico dos clientes”, disse.
- [13] Após receberem os alimentos, os sem-terra partiram em passeata pelo centro de Macció.
- [14] Temendo outras tentativas de saque, a maioria dos comerciantes preferiu fechar as portas das lojas enquanto os manifestantes passavam.
- [15] Durante o trajeto, os sem-terra exibiam o alimento conseguido. “Temos comida para dois dias”, afirmou Marrom.
- [16] Os trabalhadores rurais voltaram ao Ginásio de Esportes do Estado, onde 1.800 famílias estão abrigadas.

Text #4

Sem-terra tentam saquear mercado

[1] Um grupo de sem-terra ligado ao MST tentou saquear ontem a loja de um dos maiores grupos de supermercados do Nordeste, o Bompreço, no centro de Maceió (AL).

[Text 4 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 1]

Um grupo de sem-terra (...)	tentou saquear	ontem	a loja de um dos (...)	no centro de Maceió (AL)
Actor	Material	Circumstance	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[2] O saque só foi evitado porque a diretoria da empresa conseguiu negociar com os cerca de 1.200 trabalhadores rurais.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 2]

O saque	só foi evitado	porque (...)		
Goal	Material			
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 4 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 3]

A diretoria da empresa	conseguiu negociar	com os cerca de 1.200 trabalhadores rurais		
Actor	Material	Circumstance		
Theme	Rheme			

[3] Após 40 minutos de ameaças de invasão, o MST aceitou a proposta do Bompreço.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 4]

Após 40 minutos de ameaças de invasão,	o MST	aceitou	a proposta do Bompreço	
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal	
Theme	Rheme			

[4] Foi acertado que o supermercado iria doar 500 quilos de alimentos para os trabalhadores rurais – feijão, arroz, macarrão, carne-de-sol, óleo e farinha de milho.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 5]

Foi acertado que	o supermercado	iria doar	500 quilos de alimentos	para os trabalhadores rurais
	Actor	Material	Goal	Beneficiary
Theme	Rheme			

[5] Os sem-terra estão em Maceió desde o último dia 7, quando participaram do protesto “Grito dos Excluídos”. Eles querem a liberação de 7.200 cestas básicas para as famílias acampadas no Estado e denunciam que há três meses não recebem alimentos do governo federal.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 6]

Os sem-terra	estão	em Maceió	desde o último dia 7	
Identified	Relational	Identifier	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 4 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 7]

[Os sem-terra]	participaram	do protesto “Grito dos Excluídos”		
Actor	Material	Circumstance		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 4 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 8]

Eles	querem	a liberação de 7.200 cestas básicas	para as famílias acampadas no Estado
Senser	Mental	Phenomenon	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 4 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 9]

[Eles]	denunciam	que há três meses não recebem alimentos do governo federal
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[6] “Amanhã temos uma reunião com o Incra (Instituto Nacional de Colonização e Reforma Agrária) e, caso nossos pedidos não sejam atendidos, vamos voltar a fazer saques”, afirmou o coordenador do MST (Movimento dos Trabalhadores Rurais Sem Terra) em Alagoas, Marco Antônio da Silva, o Marrom.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 10]

“Amanhã temos uma reunião com o Incra (...) vamos voltar a fazer saques”	afirmou	o coordenador do MST (...)
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 11]

[O coordenador do MST]	em Alagoas,	[é]	Marco Antônio da Silva, o Marrom
Identifier	Circumstance	Relational	Identified
Theme	Rheme		

[7] O superintendente do Incra, Ricardo Vitorio, afirmou que os problemas com o MST devem ser solucionados hoje.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 12]

O superintendente do Incra, (...)	afirmou	que os problemas com o MST devem ser solucionados hoje
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 13]

O superintendente do Incra	[é]	Ricardo Vitorio
Identifier	Relational	Identified
Theme	Rheme	

[8] Diante das ameaças dos trabalhadores do MST, o comando da Polícia Militar do Estado determinou rondas de duas em duas horas nos supermercados da capital alagoana.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 14]

Diante das ameaças (...)	o comando da Polícia (...)	determinou	rondas	de duas em duas horas nos (...)
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[9] A PM participou da negociação para impedir o saque ontem no Bompreço.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 15]

A PM	participou	da negociação para impedir o saque ontem no Bompreço.
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[10] A direção do supermercado não divulgou o custo da doação que fez para impedir o saque.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 16]

A direção do supermercado	não divulgou	o custo da doação que fez para impedir o saque
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[11] “Entendemos que há um problema político, mas sabemos que há fome entre os sem-terra”, afirmou o diretor regional do Bompreço, Marco Aurélio Feitosa.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 17]

“Entendemos que há um problema político, mas sabemos (...)”	afirmou	o diretor regional do Bompreço
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 18]

O diretor regional do Bompreço	[é]	Marco Aurélio Feitosa
Identifier	Relational	Identified
Theme	Rheme	

[12] “A negociação impediu a depredação da loja e o pânico dos clientes”, disse.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 19]

“A negociação impediu a depredação da loja e o pânico dos clientes”	disse	[Marco Aurélio Feitosa]
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[13] Após receberem os alimentos, os sem-terra partiram em passeata pelo centro de Maceió.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 13 Clause 20]

Após receberem os alimentos,	os sem-terra	partiram	em passeata pelo centro de Maceió
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[14] Temendo outras tentativas de saque, a maioria dos comerciantes preferiu fechar as portas das lojas enquanto os manifestantes passavam.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 14 Clause 21]

Temendo outras (...)	a maioria dos comerciantes	preferiu fechar as portas (...)	enquanto os manifestantes (...)	
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[15] Durante o trajeto, os sem-terra exibiam o alimento conseguido. “Temos comida para dois dias”, afirmou Marrom.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 22]

Durante o trajeto,	os sem-terra	exibiam	o alimento conseguido
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 4 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 23]

"Temos comida para dois dias",			afirmou	Marrom
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer		
Theme	Rheme			

[16] Os trabalhadores rurais voltaram ao Ginásio de Esportes do Estado, onde 1.800 famílias estão abrigadas.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 24]

Os trabalhadores rurais			voltaram	ao Ginásio de Esportes do Estado
Actor	Material	Circumstance		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 4 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 25]

[No Ginásio de Esportes do Estado]		1.800 famílias	estão abrigadas	
Circumstance		Goal	Material	
Theme	Rheme			

Text #4

Sem-terra tentam saquear mercado

TOTALS

Total number of words in the text: 373 words

Total number of clauses analysed in the text: 25 clauses

Total number of occurrences of process types:

Material: 13 Material Processes

Mental: 01 Mental Processes

Relational: 04 Relational Processes

Behavioural: 00 Behavioural Processes

Verbal: 07 Verbal Processes

Existential: 00 Existential Processes

Tcxt #5

QUESTÃO AGRÁRIA *Estudantes são mantidos em 1.100 escolas por meio de projeto financiado pelo governo federal*

Com verba pública, MST dá aula a 100 mil

LÉO GERCHMANN
da Agência Folha, em Porto Alegre

[1] O MST (Movimento dos Trabalhadores Rurais Sem Terra), com a ajuda do dinheiro público, expande pelo país a sua “pedagogia transformadora”.

[2] Já são mais de 100 mil “sem terrinhas”, em 1.100 escolas da rede pública de ensino fundamental, que recebem de 3.000 educadores “ensino de transformação para uma sociedade humanitária” (em vez de ensino ideológico).

[3] Nas salas de aulas dos professores do MST, a “aprendizagem é feita a partir do cotidiano rural” (em vez do método Paulo Freire, também conhecido como a “pedagogia do oprimido” e defendido por setores de esquerda).

[4] Há outros 500 alunos em cursos técnicos, magistério, graduação e pós-graduação em pedagogia.

[5] Por meio do Programa Nacional de Educação na Reforma Agrária e de outros meios, o Incra (Instituto Nacional de Colonização e Reforma Agrária), o MST e o Ministério da Educação promovem cursos universitários de pedagogia, profissionalizantes e de alfabetização.

[6] O interesse do governo federal ao apoiar a educação rural é “qualificar a educação das crianças e adolescentes”, de acordo com a superintendente-adjunta do Incra no Rio Grande do Sul, Maria Helena Córbelini.

[7] “A proposta não é ideologizada, aproveitamos os professores do MST por ser viável”, disse.

[8] A Unijuí, da cidade de Ijuí (RS), a Universidade Estadual de Mato Grosso e a Universidade Federal do Espírito Santo oferecem a formação na “pedagogia transformadora”. Na federal da Paraíba, há curso de magistério.

[9] Para formar uma turma de universitários que sirvam aos interesses dos sem-terra, são necessários quatro anos. No período, os cofres públicos e o MST (em menor parcela) bancam R\$ 800 mil em cada universidade.

[10] Durante o curso superior, os alunos já lecionam nos assentamentos. Para entrar nas faculdades, todas regulares, os candidatos são indicados pelo MST e passam por um processo de seleção — normalmente, um vestibular específico para os cursos.

[11] As aulas das universidades ocorrem em janeiro, fevereiro e julho, quando há férias escolares nos assentamentos e os professores podem se ausentar.

[12] Na tese de doutorado “Escola é Mais do que Escola na Pedagogia do MST”, defendida na Universidade Federal do Rio Grande do Sul, a educadora Roseli Salete Caldart conta “como se forma a escola a partir da experiência social no campo”.

[13] Caldart trabalha há 13 anos na formação de professores do MST (que lecionam em assentamentos). “O desafio é multiplicar as possibilidades de formação de professores. Quanto mais cursos tivermos, melhor. Queremos cursos em todo o país”, disse.

[14] Em breve, novas opções devem surgir em Mato Grosso do Sul e em São Paulo.

Ideologia

[15] “Uma das lições destes anos todos é que a questão da reforma agrária é mais complexa que a simples distribuição de terra. O conhecimento técnico e cultural é essencial. O que está em jogo é a produção de uma nova cultura no meio rural. Queremos recuperar uma cultura camponesa”, afirma.

[16] “Os cursos se vinculam a ações de luta, com a idéia de que a história está em marcha. Os alunos refletem sobre o que fazem, sobre o seu contexto. As pessoas se tornam sujeitos reflexivos. Formamos novos seres humanos, com preocupação humanitária. É um processo mais demorado de transformação da sociedade. Quanto mais disseminado, mais transformações para uma consciência social.”

[17] Apesar do discurso, ela nega o interesse em um ensino ideológico. “Existe um compromisso político sim, que é explícito e direto, mas que tem um interesse mais abrangente que o do MST. Temos a missão de dar uma educação ampla, é claro que com o compromisso da transformação.”

[18] Mario Sergio Cortella, professor de pós-graduação em educação da PUC-SP, considera a proposta importante para não deixar as crianças fora da escola, uma vez que, distantes da área urbana, teriam dificuldade para estudar.

[19] No entanto, Cortella, que foi secretário de Educação no governo petista de Luiza Erundina em São Paulo (1989-1992), acha necessário ter “abertura curricular que permita aos alunos ingressar em outras formas de economia”.

Text #5

Com verba pública, MST dá aula a 100 mil

[1] O MST (Movimento dos Trabalhadores Rurais Sem Terra), com a ajuda do dinheiro público, expande pelo país a sua “pedagogia transformadora”.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 1]

O MST (...)	com a ajuda do dinheiro público,	expande	pelo país	a sua “pedagogia transformadora”
Actor	Circumstance	Material	Circumstance	Goal
Theme	Rheme			

[2] Já são mais de 100 mil “sem terrinhas”, em 1.100 escolas da rede pública de ensino fundamental, que recebem de 3.000 educadores “ensino de transformação para uma sociedade humanitária” (em vez de ensino ideológico).

[Text 5 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 2]

Mais de 100 mil “sem terrinhas”	recebem	de 3.000 educadores	“ensino de transformação (...)”
Beneficiary	Material	Actor	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 3]

[Mais de 100 mil “sem terrinhas”]	[estão]	em 1.100 escolas da rede pública de ensino fundamental,
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[3] Nas salas de aulas dos professores do MST, a “aprendizagem é feita a partir do cotidiano rural” (em vez do método Paulo Freire, também conhecido como a “pedagogia do oprimido” e defendido por setores de esquerda).

[Text 5 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 4]

Nas salas de aulas dos professores do MST,	a “aprendizagem	é feita	a partir do cotidiano rural”
Circumstance	Goal	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 5]

[O método Paulo Freire]	é conhecido	como a “pedagogia do oprimido”
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 6]

O método Paulo Freire	é defendido	por setores de esquerda
Goal	Material	Actor
Theme	Rheme	

[4] Há outros 500 alunos em cursos técnicos, magistério, graduação e pós-graduação em pedagogia.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 7]

Há	outros 500 alunos	em cursos técnicos, magistério, graduação e pós-graduação em pedagogia
Existential	Existent	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[5] Por meio do Programa Nacional de Educação na Reforma Agrária e de outros meios, o Incra (Instituto Nacional de Colonização e Reforma Agrária), o MST e o Ministério da Educação promovem cursos universitários de pedagogia, profissionalizantes e de alfabetização.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 8]

Por meio do Programa (...) o Incra (...), o MST e o Ministério (...) promovem cursos universitários de (...)			
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[6] O interesse do governo federal ao apoiar a educação rural é “qualificar a educação das crianças e adolescentes”, de acordo com a superintendente-adjunta do Incra no Rio Grande do Sul, Maria Helena Córbelini.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 9]

O interesse do governo ao apoiar a educação (...) é		"qualificar a educação (...)", de acordo com a (...)	
Identified	Relational	Identifier	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 10]

A superintendente-adjunta do Incra no Rio Grande do Sul [é]		Maria Helena Córbelini	
Identifier	Relational	Identified	
Theme	Rheme		

[7] “A proposta não é ideologizada, aproveitamos os professores do MST por ser viável”, disse.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 11]

“A proposta não é ideologizada, aproveitamos os (...) por ser viável”, disse		[Maria Helena Córbelini]	
Verbiage	Verbal	Saycr	
Theme	Rheme		

[8] A Unijuí, da cidade de Ijuí (RS), a Universidade Estadual de Mato Grosso e a Universidade Federal do Espírito Santo oferecem a formação na “pedagogia transformadora”. Na federal da Paraíba, há curso de magistério.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 12]

A Unijuí, da cidade de Ijuí (RS), a Universidade (...) oferecem		a formação na “pedagogia transformadora”	
Actor	Material	Goal	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 13]

Na federal da Paraíba, há		curso de magistério	
Circumstance	Existential	Existent	
Theme	Rheme		

[9] Para formar uma turma de universitários que sirvam aos interesses dos sem-terra, são necessários quatro anos. No período, os cofres públicos e o MST (em menor parcela) bancam R\$ 800 mil em cada universidade.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 14]

Para formar uma turma de universitários que sirvam (...), são		necessários	quatro anos
Circumstance	Relational	Attribute	Carrier
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 15]

No periodo,	os cofres públicos e o MST (...)	bancam	R\$ 800 mil	em cada universidade
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[10] Durante o curso superior, os alunos já lecionam nos assentamentos. Para entrar nas faculdades, todas regulares, os candidatos são indicados pelo MST e passam por um processo de seleção – normalmente, um vestibular específico para os cursos.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 16]

Durante o curso superior,	os alunos	já lecionam	nos assentamentos
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 17]

Para entrar nas faculdades, todas regulares,	os candidatos	são indicados	pelo MST
Circumstance	Goal	Material	Actor
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 18]

[Os candidatos]	passam	por um processo de seleção – normalmente, um vestibular específico para (...)
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[11] As aulas das universidades ocorrem em janeiro, fevereiro e julho, quando há férias escolares nos assentamentos e os professores podem se ausentar.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 19]

As aulas das universidades	ocorrem	em janeiro, fevereiro e julho
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 20]

Em janeiro, fevereiro e julho	há	férias escolares nos assentamentos
Circumstance	Existential	Existent
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 21]

[Em janeiro, fevereiro e julho]	os professores	podem se ausentar
Circumstance	Actor	Material
Theme	Rheme	

[12] Na tese de doutorado “Escola é Mais do que Escola na Pedagogia do MST”, defendida na Universidade Federal do Rio Grande do Sul, a educadora Roseli Salette Caldart conta “como se forma a escola a partir da experiência social no campo”.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 22]

Na tese de doutorado (...)	a educadora Roseli Salette Caldart	conta	“como se forma a escola a partir (...)”
Circumstance	Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme		

[13] Caldart trabalha há 13 anos na formação de professores do MST (que lecionam em assentamentos). “O desafio é multiplicar as possibilidades de formação de professores. Quanto mais cursos tivermos, melhor. Queremos cursos em todo o país”, disse.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 23]

Caldart	trabalha	há 13 anos	na formação de professores do MST (que lecionam em assentamentos)
Actor	Material	Circumstance	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 24]

“O desafio é multiplicar as possibilidades de formação de professores”	[disse]	[Caldart]
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 24a]

“Quanto mais cursos tivermos, melhor”	[disse]	[Caldart]
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 24b]

“Queremos cursos em todo o país”	disse	[Caldart]
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[14] Em breve, novas opções devem surgir em Mato Grosso do Sul e em São Paulo.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 25]

Em breve,	novas opções	devem surgir	em Mato Grosso do Sul e em São Paulo.
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[15] “Uma das lições destes anos todos é que a questão da reforma agrária é mais complexa que a simples distribuição de terra. O conhecimento técnico e cultural é essencial. O que está em jogo é a produção de uma nova cultura no meio rural. Queremos recuperar uma cultura camponesa”, afirma.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 26]

“Uma das lições destes anos todos é que a questão da reforma agrária é mais complexa (...)”	[afirma]	[Caldart]
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 26a]

“O conhecimento técnico e cultural é essencial”	[afirma]	[Caldart]
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 26b]

“O que está em jogo é a produção de uma nova cultura no meio rural”	[afirma]	[Caldart]
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 26c]

“Queremos recuperar uma cultura camponesa”,	afirma	[Caldart]
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[16] “Os cursos se vinculam a ações de luta, com a idéia de que a história está em marcha. Os alunos refletem sobre o que fazem, sobre o seu contexto. As pessoas se tornam sujeitos reflexivos. Formamos novos seres humanos, com preocupação humanitária. É um processo mais demorado de transformação da sociedade. Quanto mais disseminado, mais transformações para uma consciência social.”

[Text 5 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 27]

“Os cursos se vinculam a ações de luta, com a idéia de que a história está em marcha”			[disse]	[Caldart]
Verbiage			Verbal	Sayer
Theme			Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 27a]

“Os alunos refletem sobre o que fazem, sobre o seu contexto”			[disse]	[Caldart]
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 5 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 27b]

“As pessoas se tornam sujeitos reflexivos”			[disse]	[Caldart]
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 5 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 27c]

“Formamos novos seres humanos, com preocupação humanitária”			[disse]	[Caldart]
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 5 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 27d]

“É um processo mais demorado de transformação da sociedade”			[disse]	[Caldart]
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 5 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 27e]

“Quanto mais disseminado, mais transformações para uma consciência social”			[disse]	[Caldart]
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer		
Theme	Rheme			

[17] Apesar do discurso, ela nega o interesse em um ensino ideológico. “Existe um compromisso político sim, que é explícito e direto, mas que tem um interesse mais abrangente que o do MST. Temos a missão de dar uma educação ampla, é claro que com o compromisso da transformação.”

[Text 5 - Paragraph 17 - Clause 28]

Apesar do discurso,	ela	nega	o interesse em um ensino ideológico	
Circumstance	Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage	
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 5 - Paragraph 17 - Clause 29]

“Existe um compromisso político sim, que é explícito e direto, mas que tem um (...)”			[disse]	[Caldart]
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 5 - Paragraph 17 - Clause 29a]

“Temos a missão de dar uma educação ampla, é claro que com o compromisso da (...)”			[disse]	[Caldart]
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer		
Theme	Rheme			

[18] Mario Sergio Cortella, professor de pós-graduação em educação da PUC-SP, considera a proposta importante para não deixar as crianças fora da escola, uma vez que, distantes da área urbana, teriam dificuldade para estudar.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 18 - Clause 30]

Mario Sergio Cortella, (...)	considera	a proposta importante	para não deixar as crianças fora da escola
Senser	Mental	Phenomenon	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 18 - Clause 31]

Uma vez que, distantes da área urbana,	[as crianças]	teriam	dificuldade para estudar
Circumstance	Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 18 - Clause 32]

[Mario Sergio Cortella]	[é]	professor de pós-graduação em educação da PUC-SP	
Identified	Relational	Identifier	
Theme	Rheme		

[19] No entanto, Cortella, que foi secretário de Educação no governo petista de Luiza Erundina em São Paulo (1989-1992), acha necessário ter “abertura curricular que permita aos alunos ingressar em outras formas de economia”.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 19 - Clause 33]

No entanto,	Cortella, (...)	acha	necessário ter “abertura curricular que permita aos alunos (...)”
	Senser	Mental	Phenomenon
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 19 - Clause 34]

[Cortella]	foi	secretário de Educação no governo petista de Luiza Erundina em São Paulo (...)	
Identified	Relational	Identifier	
Theme	Rheme		

Text #5

Com verba pública, MST dá aula a 100 mil

TOTALS

Total number of words in the text: 667 words

Total number of clauses analysed in the text: 34 clauses

Total number of occurrences of process types:

Material: 14 Material Processes

Mental: 02 Mental Processes

Relational: 08 Relational Processes

Behavioural: 00 Behavioural Processes

Verbal: 07 Verbal Processes

Existential: 03 Existential Processes

Text #6

MISCELÂNEA *Guerrilheiros e militantes de esquerda discutirão em Belém (PA) formas de combate ao neoliberalismo***Evento reunirá zapatistas, Farc e MST**

RICARDO GALHARDO
da Reportagem Local
SORAYA AGÉGE
Editora da Folha Campinas

[1] Pelo menos 1.500 militantes de esquerda devem acampar em ginásios, escolas e áreas abertas de Belém (PA), entre os dias 6 e 11 de dezembro, para debater propostas contra o neoliberalismo e o processo de globalização econômica. O 2º Encontro Americano pela Humanidade e Contra o Neoliberalismo vai reunir um verdadeiro “balaio de gatos” ideológico.

[2] Vão participar dos debates desde organizações guerrilheiras, como as Farc (Forças Armadas Revolucionárias da Colômbia) e o próprio EZLN (Exército Zapatista de Libertação Nacional), até organismos religiosos como a CPT (Comissão Pastoral da Terra), além do PRC (Partido de Refundação Comunista) italiano, partidos políticos da esquerda brasileira, MST (Movimento Nacional, dos Trabalhadores Sem Terra), MLST (Movimento de Libertação dos Sem Terra), além de Greenpeace, CUT (Central única dos Trabalhadores) e grupos indígenas.

[3] O encontro é organizado pela Prefeitura de Belém (PA) e pelo Centro Memorial Cabano.

[4] Segundo um dos coordenadores do evento, Manoel Lima Amaral, 26, são esperados aproximadamente 1.500 delegados e mil participantes.

Primeiro encontro

[5] O primeiro encontro foi realizado em Chiapas (região sul do México), em 96. “O segundo será realizado em Belém porque a cidade tem a característica de portal da Amazônia e funciona como referência indígena”, disse Amaral.

[6] “O Brasil foi escolhido para sediar o segundo encontro porque tem um peso geopolítico maior que o do México”, disse Magno Carvalho, fundador do Comitê de Solidariedade às Comunidades Zapatistas de São Paulo.

[7] Segundo Carvalho, a difusão do zapatismo no Brasil é definida como crucial pelo próprio subcomandante Marcos, líder do EZLN, para o sucesso do movimento mexicano.

‘Internacional da Esperança’

[8] “Vamos trocar experiências, mas também queremos unificar um plano de ação conjunta para a implantação da ‘Internacional da Esperança’ (organismo mundial que congregaria minorias do mundo todo, idealizado pelo subcomandante Marcos)”, afirmou.

Custos

[9] Segundo Carvalho, embora o encontro reúna grupos guerrilheiros, o evento deverá discutir apenas modos pacíficos de combate ao neoliberalismo. O comitê de organização informou que o evento terá seus custos cobertos pelos próprios participantes, que pagarão US\$ 3 e US\$ 7.

[10] Além do próprio EZLN, as principais “estrelas” do encontro serão o MST, as Farc (Colômbia) e até os Panteras Negras (EUA), que atuaram nos EUA na década de 70 e foram acusados de ações terroristas. Também participarão representantes de comunidades indígenas desde o Canadá até a

Argentina, homossexuais, punks, anarquistas, sindicatos, mulheres etc. Apesar do caráter continental, o evento contará com a participação de grupos europeus e africanos.

'Destino'

[11] No material de divulgação do encontro há uma convocação do próprio Marcos: "Todos os ventos já têm um destino: Belém, Pará, Brasil".

[12] Desde a semana passada, o zapatista Edur Velasco, da FZLN (Frente Zapatista de Libertação Nacional), braço civil do EZLN, está no Brasil cuidando dos últimos preparativos para o encontro. Na quinta-feira ele se reuniu com o presidente da CUT (Central única dos Trabalhadores), Vicente Paulo da Silva. Na sexta, Velasco participou de um debate na USP (Universidade de São Paulo) com estudantes.

[13] A página da organização do encontro na Internet é www.encontroamericano.com.br.

(Embedded text)

Lema do EZLN é 'terra e liberdade'

da Redação

[14] O Exército Zapatista de Libertação Nacional (EZLN) ficou conhecido internacionalmente no ano de 1994, após atacar tropas do governo mexicano e ocupar cinco cidades do Estado de Chiapas, uma região marcada pela pobreza.

[15] Entre os dias 1º e 11 de janeiro, data em que foi assinado o primeiro cessar-fogo, 400 pessoas morreram no conflito. Desde então zapatistas e governo mantêm uma relação instável, alternando momentos de negociação e combates.

[16] O grupo, inspirado em Emiliano Zapata, herói da Revolução Mexicana (1910), afirma lutar pela causa indígena e pela reforma agrária. O seu lema é "terra e liberdade".

[17] A rígida estrutura militar do EZLN é comandada pelo professor de sociologia Rafael Sebastian Guillen, conhecido como subcomandante Marcos.

Text #6

Evento reunirá zapatistas, Farc e MST & Lema do EZLN é 'terra e liberdade'

[1] Pelo menos 1.500 militantes de esquerda devem acampar em ginásios, escolas e áreas abertas de Belém (PA), entre os dias 6 e 11 de dezembro, para debater propostas contra o neoliberalismo e o processo de globalização econômica. O 2º Encontro Americano pela Humanidade e Contra o Neoliberalismo vai reunir um verdadeiro "balaio de gatos" ideológico.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 1]

Pelo menos 1.500 militantes (...) devem acampar em ginásios, escolas e (...) entre os dias 6 e 11 de (...)		
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 2]

[Os militantes]	[vão] debater	propostas	contra o neoliberalismo e o processo de globalização econômica
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 3]

O 2º Encontro Americano (...)	vai reunir	um verdadeiro "balaio de gatos" ideológico	
Actor	Material	Goal	
Theme	Rheme		

[2] Vão participar dos debates desde organizações guerrilheiras, como as Farc (Forças Armadas Revolucionárias da Colômbia) e o próprio EZLN (Exército Zapatista de Libertação Nacional), até organismos religiosos como a CPT (Comissão Pastoral da Terra), além do PRC (Partido de Refundação Comunista) italiano, partidos políticos da esquerda brasileira, MST (Movimento Nacional, dos Trabalhadores Sem Terra), MLST (Movimento de Libertação dos Sem Terra), além de Greenpeace, CUT (Central única dos Trabalhadores) e grupos indígenas.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 4]

Vão participar	dos debates	desde organizações guerrilheiras (...) até organismos religiosos	
Material	Goal	Actor	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 5]

[Vão participar]	[dos debates]	[as Farc, o EZLN, a CPT, o PRC, partidos políticos da esquerda, o MST, (...)]	
Material	Goal	Actor	
Theme	Rheme		

[3] O encontro é organizado pela Prefeitura de Belém (PA) e pelo Centro Memorial Cabano.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 6]

O encontro	é organizado	pela Prefeitura de Belém (PA) e pelo Centro Memorial Cabano	
Goal	Material	Actor	
Theme	Rheme		

[4] Segundo um dos coordenadores do evento, Manoel Lima Amaral, 26, são esperados aproximadamente 1.500 delegados e mil participantes.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 7]

Segundo um dos coordenadores (...)	são esperados	aproximadamente 1.500 delegados e mil (...)	
Circumstance	Material	Goal	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 8]

[Um dos coordenadores do evento]	[é]	Manoel Lima Amaral
Identifier	Relational	Identified
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 9]

[Manoel Lima Amaral]	[tem]	26 [anos]
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[5] O primeiro encontro foi realizado em Chiapas (região sul do México), em 96. “O segundo será realizado em Belém porque a cidade tem a característica de portal da Amazônia e funciona como referência indígena”, disse Amaral.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 10]

O primeiro encontro	foi realizado	em Chiapas (região sul do México), em 96
Goal	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 11]

“O segundo será realizado em Belém porque a cidade tem a característica de portal (...)”,	disse	Amaral
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[6] “O Brasil foi escolhido para sediar o segundo encontro porque tem um peso geopolítico maior que o do México”, disse Magno Carvalho, fundador do Comitê de Solidariedade às Comunidades Zapatistas de São Paulo.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 12]

“O Brasil foi escolhido para sediar o segundo encontro porque tem (...)”,	disse	Magno Carvalho
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 13]

[Magno Carvalho]	[é]	fundador do Comitê de Solidariedade às Comunidades Zapatistas de (...)
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[7] Segundo Carvalho, a difusão do zapatismo no Brasil é definida como crucial pelo próprio subcomandante Marcos, líder do EZLN, para o sucesso do movimento mexicano.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 14]

Segundo Carvalho,	a difusão do zapatismo (...)	é definida	como crucial pelo próprio (...)
Circumstance	Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 15]

[Subcomandante Marcos]	[é]	[o] líder do EZLN
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[8] “Vamos trocar experiências, mas também queremos unificar um plano de ação conjunta para a implantação da ‘Internacional da Esperança’ (organismo mundial que congregaria minorias do mundo todo, idealizado pelo subcomandante Marcos)”, afirmou.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 16]

"Vamos trocar experiências, mas também queremos unificar um plano de ação (...)",			afirmou	[Carvalho]
Verbiage		Verbal	Sayer	
Theme		Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 17]

"Internacional da Esperança"		é	[um] organismo mundial (...), idealizado pelo subcomandante Marcos	
Carrier	Relational	Attribute		
Theme	Rheme			

[9] Segundo Carvalho, embora o encontro reúna grupos guerrilheiros, o evento deverá discutir apenas modos pacíficos de combate ao neoliberalismo. O comitê de organização informou que o evento terá seus custos cobertos pelos próprios participantes, que pagarão US\$ 3 e US\$ 7.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 18]

Segundo Carvalho, (...)		o evento	deverá discutir	apenas modos pacíficos de combate ao (...)
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal	
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 6 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 19]

O encontro	[reúne]	grupos guerrilheiros		
Actor	Material	Goal		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 6 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 20]

O comitê de organização		informou	que o evento terá seus custos cobertos pelos próprios participantes	
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 6 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 21]

[Os] próprios participantes (...)		pagarão	US\$ 3 e US\$ 7	
Actor	Material	Goal		
Theme	Rheme			

[10] Além do próprio EZLN, as principais "estrelas" do encontro serão o MST, as Farc (Colômbia) e até os Panteras Negras (EUA), que atuaram nos EUA na década de 70 e foram acusados de ações terroristas. Também participarão representantes de comunidades indígenas desde o Canadá até a Argentina, homossexuais, punks, anarquistas, sindicatos, mulheres etc. Apesar do caráter continental, o evento contará com a participação de grupos europeus e africanos.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 22]

Além do próprio EZLN,		as principais "estrelas" do encontro	serão	o MST, as Farc (Colômbia) e (...)
Circumstance	Identified	Relational	Identifier	
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 6 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 23]

[Os Panteras Negras]	atuaram	nos EUA na década de 70		
Actor	Material	Circumstance		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 6 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 24]

[Os Panteras Negras]	foram acusados	de ações terroristas		
Target	Verbal	Circumstance		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 6 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 25]

Também	participarão	representantes de comunidades indígenas desde o Canadá até a Argentina, (...)
	Material	Actor
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 26]

Apesar do caráter continental,	o evento	contará	com a participação de grupos europeus e africanos
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Range
Theme	Rheme		

[11] No material de divulgação do encontro há uma convocação do próprio Marcos: “Todos os ventos já têm um destino: Belém, Pará, Brasil”.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 27]

No material de divulgação do encontro há	uma convocação do próprio Marcos: “Todos os ventos (...)”		
Circumstance	Existential	Existent	
Theme	Rheme		

[12] Desde a semana passada, o zapatista Edur Velasco, da FZLN (Frente Zapatista de Libertação Nacional), braço civil do EZLN, está no Brasil cuidando dos últimos preparativos para o encontro. Na quinta-feira ele se reuniu com o presidente da CUT (Central única dos Trabalhadores), Vicente Paulo da Silva. Na sexta, Velasco participou de um debate na USP (Universidade de São Paulo) com estudantes.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 28]

Desde a semana passada,	o zapatista Edur Velasco, (...)	está	no Brasil	cuidando dos últimos (...)
Circumstance	Identified	Relational	Identifier	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 6 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 29]

Edur Velasco	[é]	da FZLN (Frente Zapatista de Libertação Nacional)		
Identified	Relational	Identifier		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 6 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 30]

Na quinta-feira	ele	se reuniu	com o presidente da CUT
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 31]

O presidente da CUT	[é]	Vicente Paulo da Silva		
Identifier	Relational	Identified		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 6 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 32]

Na sexta,	Velasco	participou	de um debate na USP (Universidade de São Paulo) com estudantes
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[13] A página da organização do encontro na Internet é www.encontroamericano.com.br.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 33]

A página da organização do encontro na Internet	é	www.encontroamericano.com.br		
Identified	Relational	Identifier		
Theme	Rheme			

[14] O Exército Zapatista de Libertação Nacional (EZLN) ficou conhecido internacionalmente no ano de 1994, após atacar tropas do governo mexicano e ocupar cinco cidades do Estado de Chiapas, uma região marcada pela pobreza.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 34]

O Exército Zapatista de Libertação Nacional (...)			ficou conhecido	internacionalmente no ano de 1994
Phenomenon		Mental	Circumstance	
Theme		Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 35]

[O Exército Zapatista]		atacou	tropas do governo mexicano	
Actor	Material	Goal		
Theme		Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 36]

[O Exército Zapatista]		ocupou	cinco cidades	do Estado de Chiapas
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance	
Theme		Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 37]

[O] Estado de Chiapas		[é]	uma região marcada pela pobreza	
Carrier	Relational	Attribute		
Theme		Rheme		

[15] Entre os dias 1º e 11 de janeiro, data em que foi assinado o primeiro cessar-fogo, 400 pessoas morreram no conflito. Desde então zapatistas e governo mantêm uma relação instável, alternando momentos de negociação e combates.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 38]

Entre os dias 1º e 11 de janeiro, data em que		foi assinado	o primeiro cessar-fogo	
Circumstance		Material	Goal	
Theme		Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 39]

400 pessoas	morreram	no conflito		
Actor	Material	Circumstance		
Theme		Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 40]

Desde então	zapatistas e governo		mantêm	uma relação instável,	alternando momentos de (...)
Circumstance	Carrier	Relational	Attribute	Circumstance	
Theme		Rheme			

[16] O grupo, inspirado em Emiliano Zapata, herói da Revolução Mexicana (1910), afirma lutar pela causa indígena e pela reforma agrária. O seu lema é "terra e liberdade".

[Text 6 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 41]

O grupo, (...)		afirma lutar	pela causa indígena e pela reforma agrária		
Actor	Material	Goal			
Theme		Rheme			

[Text 6 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 42]

O grupo	[inspirou-se]	em Emiliano Zapata, herói da Revolução Mexicana (1910)
Senser	Mental	Phenomenon
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 43]

O seu lema	é	"terra e liberdade"
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[17] A rígida estrutura militar do EZLN é comandada pelo professor de sociologia Rafael Sebastian Guillen, conhecido como subcomandante Marcos.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 17 - Clause 44]

A rígida estrutura militar do EZLN	é comandada	pelo professor de sociologia (...), conhecido como (...)
Goal	Material	Actor
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 17 - Clause 45]

[O] professor de sociologia	[é]	Rafael Sebastian Guillen
Identifier	Relational	Identified
Theme	Rheme	

Text #6

Evento reunirá zapatistas, Farc e MST & Lema do EZLN é 'terra e liberdade'

TOTALS

Total number of words in the text:	124 words
Total number of clauses analysed in the text:	45 clauses
Total number of occurrences of process types:	
Material:	22 Material Processes
Mental:	02 Mental Processes
Relational:	15 Relational Processes
Behavioural:	00 Behavioural Processes
Verbal:	05 Verbal Processes
Existential:	01 Existential Processes

Folha de S. Paulo

2000

Text #1

QUESTÃO AGRÁRIA *Cerca de 600 lavradores depredaram carro da Polícia Militar em Recife, mas não houve feridos***Ato do MST acaba em conflito em PE**
da Agência Folha, em Recife

- [1] Um protesto de lavradores ligados ao MST acabou em tumulto ontem em Recife. Cerca de 600 trabalhadores bloquearam por cerca de cinco horas uma das principais vias de acesso à zona oeste da capital pernambucana, a avenida Rosa e Silva.
- [2] A Polícia Militar foi acionada e houve confusão. Um carro da corporação foi depredado com pedradas e pauladas. Na correria, policiais chegaram a apontar escopetas para um grupo de manifestantes que avançavam em direção a outro veículo da PM. Ninguém se feriu.
- [3] O protesto começou às 10h30, em frente à sede da Incra, onde cerca de 1.400 militantes do MST (Movimento dos Trabalhadores Rurais Sem Terra), segundo estimativa da PM, estão acampados desde terça-feira passada.
- [4] Armados com foices, facões, lanças feitas com bambu, barras de ferro e até espetos de churrasco, os agricultores tomaram cerca de cem metros da avenida e interditaram dois cruzamentos.
- [5] "Só vamos sair daqui quando o Incra aceitar negociar com a gente", disse o líder do MST no Estado, Jaime Amorim. A entidade reivindica agilização no processo de reforma agrária.
- [6] A PM pediu reforço e 300 homens da Tropa de Choque e da Cavalaria cercaram a área.
- [7] O clima ficou ainda mais tenso quando, segundo um dos comandantes da operação, o major Ary Falcão, pelo menos mil manifestantes foram às ruas.
- [8] "Não fizemos nada, só reagimos porque fomos provocados", afirmou Amorim. "A prova de que a PM nada fez é que nossos homens não reagiram", disse Falcão.
- [9] O impasse só terminou às 15h30, após a chegada de Alberto Soares, coordenador-adjunto do Pró-Rural, órgão do Estado ligado à Secretaria do Planejamento.
- [10] O coordenador se comprometeu a reunir representantes do Incra e do Estado para negociar.
- [11] Em troca, os agricultores retornaram ao pátio do Incra. Na reunião de hoje, o MST vai pedir, entre outras coisas, a vistoria, ainda este ano, de 65 das 132 áreas invadidas no Estado. O superintendente do Incra, Roosevelt Gonçalves, contudo, disse que não negocia com prédio invadido.

Text #1

Ato do MST acaba em conflito em PE

[1] Um protesto de lavradores ligados ao MST acabou em tumulto ontem em Recife. Cerca de 600 trabalhadores bloquearam por cerca de cinco horas uma das principais vias de acesso à zona oeste da capital pernambucana, a avenida Rosa e Silva.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 1]

Um protesto de lavradores ligados ao MST			acabou	em tumulto ontem em Recife	
Actor		Material		Circumstance	
Theme			Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 2]

Cerca de 600 trabalhadores		bloquearam	por cerca de cinco horas	uma das principais vias de acesso à (...)	
Actor		Material	Circumstance	Goal	
Theme		Rheme			

[2] A Polícia Militar foi acionada e houve confusão. Um carro da corporação foi depredado com pedradas e pauladas. Na correria, policiais chegaram a apontar escopetas para um grupo de manifestantes que avançavam em direção a outro veículo da PM. Ninguém se feriu.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 3]

A Polícia Militar		foi acionada			
Goal		Material			
Theme		Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 4]

Houve		confusão			
Existential		Existent			
Theme		Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 5]

Um carro da corporação		foi depredado	com pedradas e pauladas		
Goal		Material	Circumstance		
Theme		Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 6]

Na correria,		policiais	chegaram a apontar	escopetas	para um grupo de manifestantes
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance	
Theme		Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 7]

Manifestantes		avançavam	em direção a outro veículo da PM		
Actor		Material	Circumstance		
Theme		Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 8]

Ninguém		se feriu			
Actor		Material			
Theme		Rheme			

[3] O protesto começou às 10h30, em frente à sede da Incra, onde cerca de 1.400 militantes do MST (Movimento dos Trabalhadores Rurais Sem Terra), segundo estimativa da PM, estão acampados desde terça-feira passada.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 9]

O protesto			começou	às 10h30, em frente à sede da Incra		
Actor	Material	Circumstance				
Theme		Rheme				

[Text 1 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 10]

Cerca de 1.400 militantes do MST (...)			segundo estimativa da PM,	estão acampados desde terça-feira passada		
Actor	Circumstance		Material	Circumstance		
Theme		Rheme				

[4] Armados com foices, facões, lanças feitas com bambu, barras de ferro e até espetos de churrasco, os agricultores tomaram cerca de cem metros da avenida e interditaram dois cruzamentos.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 11]

Armados com foices, facões, lanças (...),		os agricultores	tomaram	cerca de cem metros da avenida		
Circumstance		Actor	Material	Goal		
Theme		Rheme				

[Text 1 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 12]

[Os agricultores]	interditaram	dois cruzamentos				
Actor	Material	Goal				
Theme		Rheme				

[5] “Só vamos sair daqui quando o Incra aceitar negociar com a gente”, disse o líder do MST no Estado, Jaime Amorim. A entidade reivindica agilização no processo de reforma agrária.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 13]

“Só vamos sair daqui quando o Incra aceitar negociar com a gente”,		disse	o líder do MST no Estado (...)			
Verbiage			Verbal	Sayer		
Theme			Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 14]

O líder do MST no Estado	[é]	Jaime Amorim				
Identifier	Relational	Identified				
Theme		Rheme				

[Text 1 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 15]

A entidade	reivindica	agilização no processo de reforma agrária				
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage				
Theme		Rheme				

[6] A PM pediu reforço e 300 homens da Tropa de Choque e da Cavalaria cercaram a área.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 16]

A PM	pediu	reforço				
Actor	Material	Goal				
Theme		Rheme				

[Text 1 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 17]

300 homens da Tropa de Choque e da Cavalaria	cercaram	a área.
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[7] O clima ficou ainda mais tenso quando, segundo um dos comandantes da operação, o major Ary Falcão, pelo menos mil manifestantes foram às ruas.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 18]

O clima	ficou	ainda mais tenso
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 19]

Um dos comandantes da operação	[foi]	o major Ary Falcão
Identifier	Relational	Identified
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 20]

Segundo um dos comandantes da operação, (...)	mil manifestantes	foram	às ruas
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[8] “Não fizemos nada, só reagimos porque fomos provocados”, afirmou Amorim. “A prova de que a PM nada fez é que nossos homens não reagiram”, disse Falcão.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 21]

“Não fizemos nada, só reagimos porque fomos provocados”,	afirmou	Amorim
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 22]

“A prova de que a PM nada fez é que nossos homens não reagiram”,	disse	Falcão
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[9] O impasse só terminou às 15h30, após a chegada de Alberto Soares, coordenador-adjunto do Pró-Rural, órgão do Estado ligado à Secretaria do Planejamento.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 23]

O impasse	só terminou	às 15h30, após a chegada de Alberto Soares
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 24]

Alberto Soares	[é]	coordenador-adjunto do Pró-Rural
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 25]

[O] Pró-Rural	[é]	[um] órgão do Estado ligado à Secretaria do Planejamento
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[10] O coordenador se comprometeu a reunir representantes do Inera e do Estado para negociar.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 26]

O coordenador	se comprometeu	a reunir representantes do Inera e do Estado para negociar
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[11] Em troca, os agricultores retornaram ao pátio do Inera. Na reunião de hoje, o MST vai pedir, entre outras coisas, a vistoria, ainda este ano, de 65 das 132 áreas invadidas no Estado. O superintendente do Inera, Roosevelt Gonçalves, contudo, disse que não negocia com prédio invadido.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 27]

Em troca,	os agricultores	retornaram	ao pátio do Inera
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 28]

Na reunião de hoje,	o MST vai pedir,	entre outras coisas,	a vistoria,	ainda este ano,	de 65 das 132 (...)	
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Circumstance	Range	Circumstance	Beneficiary
Theme	Rheme					

[Text 1 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 29]

O superintendente do Inera, (...)	disse	que não negocia com prédio invadido
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 30]

[O superintendente do Inera]	[é]	Roosevelt Gonçalves
Identifier	Relational	Identified
Theme	Rheme	

Text #1

Ato do MST acaba em conflito em PE

TOTALS

Total number of words in the text: 355 words

Total number of clauses analysed in the text: 30 clauses

Total number of occurrences of process types:

Material: 18 Material Processes

Mental: 00 Mental Processes

Relational: 06 Relational Processes

Behavioural: 00 Behavioural Processes

Verbal: 05 Verbal Processes

Existential: 01 Existential Processes

Text #2

QUESTÃO AGRÁRIA *Maioria era de SP***Sem-terra urbanos completam um ano**

EDMILSON ZANETTI
da Agência Folha, em Iaras

[1] Com o acampamento itinerante de Nova Canudos, o MST completa amanhã um ano de uma experiência inédita: a realização de um movimento de grandes proporções no qual os sem-terra vêm de centros urbanos, a maioria da Grande São Paulo, sem histórico de trabalho rural.

[2] Carpinteiros, pedreiros, metalúrgicos, motoristas, cozinheiras, favelados, moradores de rua, alcoólatras – todos desempregados. Esse era o perfil básico das 1.200 famílias (cerca de 4.000 pessoas) que, recrutadas pelo MST (Movimento dos Trabalhadores Rurais Sem Terra), invadiram a fazenda Engenho d'Água, em Porto Feliz (SP), há um ano.

[3] De lá para cá, o “exército de sem-terra urbanos” perambulou por cidades paulistas até ser fixado provisoriamente pelo Incra (Instituto Nacional de Colonização e Reforma Agrária) em uma área da União em Iaras, na região de Bauru (345 km a noroeste de São Paulo), em outubro.

[4] Depois de mais de 500 km de peregrinação, hoje restam cerca de 400 famílias no Nova Canudos.

[5] Nove integrantes do acampamento foram presos nos últimos meses, acusados por quebra-quebra em pedágios. Três foram soltos na semana passada. Seis estão na prisão desde novembro.

[6] Os acampados de Nova Canudos – que participam de discussões semanais de política e economia – apresentam um discurso raramente encontrado num cidadão comum. A direção do MST realiza discussões semanais de política e economia, nas quais a visão do movimento pode ser passada aos seus integrantes.

[7] “Se o MST acabar amanhã, esse pessoal nunca mais será o mesmo. Vai continuar lutando pelos seus direitos”, afirmou o dirigente João Paulo Rodrigues Chaves, 20.

[8] “Não acredito mais em políticos. Acredito que a transformação que vai fazer somos nós, no dia em que cada brasileiro tiver consciência”, diz Gilberto Fabiano, 45, que durante 27 anos dirigiu ônibus em Guarulhos. Como os demais, Fabiano “não sabia como pegar numa enxada” quando chegou à fazenda Capivara, atual parada do Nova Canudos.

[9] Para superar a dificuldade, o MST desenvolve no local, em parceria com universidades, uma espécie de “laboratório” para ensinar a lidar com a terra e a ter noções de coletivismo.

[10] A área, de 180 hectares, foi dividida em 21 quadras. Cada quadra, chamada de núcleo, tem 20 famílias. Cada uma mora em um lote de 450 metros quadrados, onde planta o que quiser.

[11] O projeto prevê que, a partir da atividade das famílias em seus lotes, elas serão deslocadas para o centro de capacitação, onde haverá viveiros de mudas, horta comunitária e criações de animais.

[12] Cada núcleo tem ainda uma área de dois hectares para plantar para subsistência. Outra área maior, em volta, será de trabalho para produção coletiva.

[13] Haverá ainda escola, creche, farmácia, espaço cultural e igrejas. Só a escola está em construção.

[14] Quando sair um destino definitivo para essas 400 famílias, a idéia é que o local continue como “laboratório” para outros sem-terra. O Incra não tem prazo nem local definidos para o assentamento. Por enquanto, os sem-terra urbanos ainda sobrevivem de doações e de uma cesta básica do governo, com quatro itens: arroz, feijão, farinha e fubá.

Text #2

Sem-terra urbanos completam um ano

[1] Com o acampamento itinerante de Nova Canudos, o MST completa amanhã um ano de uma experiência inédita: a realização de um movimento de grandes proporções no qual os sem-terra vêm de centros urbanos, a maioria da Grande São Paulo, sem histórico de trabalho rural.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 1]

Com o acampamento itinerante (...), o MST completa amanhã um ano de uma experiência (...)				
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Circumstance	Goal
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 2 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 2]

A realização de um movimento (...) no qual os sem-terra vêm de centros urbanos, a maioria da (...)			
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[2] Carpinteiros, pedreiros, metalúrgicos, motoristas, cozinheiras, favelados, moradores de rua, alcoólatras – todos desempregados. Esse era o perfil básico das 1.200 famílias (cerca de 4.000 pessoas) que, recrutadas pelo MST (Movimento dos Trabalhadores Rurais Sem Terra), invadiram a fazenda Engenho d'Água, em Porto Feliz (SP), há um ano.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 3]

Carpinteiros, pedreiros, metalúrgicos, motoristas, cozinheiras, (...) – todos [estão] desempregados		
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 4]

Esse era o perfil básico das 1.200 famílias (...)		
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 5]

[1.200 famílias] invadiram a fazenda Engenho d'Água, (...) em Porto Feliz (SP), há um ano			
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 2 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 6]

[1.200 famílias] (cerca de 4.000 pessoas) [foram] recrutados pelo MST		
Goal	Material	Actor
Theme	Rheme	

[3] De lá para cá, o “exército de sem-terra urbanos” perambulou por cidades paulistas até ser lixado provisoriamente pelo Inra (Instituto Nacional de Colonização e Reforma Agrária) em uma área da União em Iaras, na região de Bauru (345 km a noroeste de São Paulo), em outubro.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 7]

De lá para cá, o “exército de sem-terra urbanos” perambulou por cidades paulistas			
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 2 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 8]

[O "exército de sem-terra urbanos"] [foi] [fixado] [provisoriamente] [pelo Incra (...)] [em uma área da União (...)]				
Goal	Material	Circumstance	Actor	Circumstance
Theme		Rheme		

[4] Depois de mais de 500 km de peregrinação, hoje restam cerca de 400 famílias no Nova Canudos.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 9]

Depois de mais de 500 km de peregrinação, hoje				restam	cerca de 400 famílias	no Nova Canudos
Circumstance		Existential	Existent	Circumstance		
Theme		Rheme				

[5] Nove integrantes do acampamento foram presos nos últimos meses, acusados por quebra-quebra em pedágios. Três foram soltos na semana passada. Seis estão na prisão desde novembro.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 10]

Nove integrantes do acampamento			foram presos	nos últimos meses	
Goal	Material	Circumstance			
Theme		Rheme			

[Text 2 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 11]

[Nove integrantes do acampamento]		[foram] acusados	por quebra-quebra em pedágios		
Goal	Material	Circumstance			
Theme		Rheme			

[Text 2 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 12]

Três	foram soltos	na semana passada			
Goal	Material	Circumstance			
Theme	Rheme				

[Text 2 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 13]

Seis	estão	na prisão	desde novembro		
Carrier	Relational	Attribute	Circumstance		
Theme	Rheme				

[6] Os acampados de Nova Canudos – que participam de discussões semanais de política e economia – apresentam um discurso raramente encontrado num cidadão comum. A direção do MST realiza discussões semanais de política e economia, nas quais a visão do movimento pode ser passada aos seus integrantes.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 14]

Os acampados de Nova Canudos		apresentam	um discurso raramente encontrado num cidadão comum		
Actor	Material	Goal			
Theme		Rheme			

[Text 2 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 15]

[Os acampados de Nova Canudos]		(...) participam	de discussões semanais de política e economia		
Actor	Material	Goal			
Theme		Rheme			

[Text 2 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 16]

A direção do MST	realiza	discussões semanais de política e economia			
Actor	Material	Goal			
Theme		Rheme			

[Text 2 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 17]

[Nas discussões]	a visão do movimento	pode ser passada	aos seus integrantes
Circumstance	Goal	Material	Beneficiary
Theme	Rheme		

[7] “Se o MST acabar amanhã, esse pessoal nunca mais será o mesmo. Vai continuar lutando pelos seus direitos”, afirmou o dirigente João Paulo Rodrigues Chaves, 20.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 18]

“Se o MST acabar amanhã, esse pessoal nunca mais será o mesmo. Vai (...)”,	afirmou	o dirigente
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 19]

[O dirigente]	[é]	João Paulo Rodrigues Chaves
Identifier	Relational	Identified
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 20]

João Paulo Rodrigues Chaves	[tem]	20 [anos]
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[8] “Não acredito mais em políticos. Acredito que a transformação quem vai fazer somos nós, no dia em que cada brasileiro tiver consciência”, diz Gilberto Fabiano, 45, que durante 27 anos dirigiu ônibus em Guarulhos. Como os demais, Fabiano “não sabia como pegar numa enxada” quando chegou à fazenda Capivara, atual parada do Nova Canudos.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 21]

“Não acredito mais em políticos”	[diz]	[Gilberto Fabiano]
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 21a]

“Acredito que a transformação quem vai fazer somos nós, no dia em que cada (...)”	diz	Gilberto Fabiano
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 22]

Gilberto Fabiano	[tem]	45 [anos]
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 23]

[Gilberto Fabiano]	durante 27 anos	dirigiu	ônibus	em Guarulhos
Actor	Circumstance	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 2 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 24]

Como os demais,	Fabiano	“não sabia	como pegar numa enxada”	quando chegou à fazenda Capivara, (...)
Circumstance	Senser	Mental	Phenomenon	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[9] Para superar a dificuldade, o MST desenvolve no local, em parceria com universidades, uma espécie de “laboratório” para ensinar a lidar com a terra e a ter noções de coletivismo.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 25]

Para superar a dificuldade, o MST desenvolve no local, (...) uma espécie de “laboratório”				
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Circumstance	Goal
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 2 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 25a]

O MST [desenvolve] em parceria com universidades, [uma espécie de “laboratório”] (...)			
Actor	Material	Circumstance	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 2 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 25b]

O MST [desenvolve] [uma espécie de “laboratório”] para ensinar a lidar com a terra e a ter noções de (...)			
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[10] A área, de 180 hectares, foi dividida em 21 quadras. Cada quadra, chamada de núcleo, tem 20 famílias. Cada uma mora em um lote de 450 metros quadrados, onde planta o que quiser.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 26]

A área, (...) foi dividida em 21 quadras		
Goal	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 27]

A área [tem] 180 hectares		
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 28]

Cada quadra, (...) tem 20 famílias		
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 29]

[Cada quadra] [é] chamada de núcleo		
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 30]

Cada uma mora em um lote de 450 metros quadrados		
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 31]

[Cada uma família] planta o que quiser		
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[11] O projeto prevê que, a partir da atividade das famílias em seus lotes, elas serão deslocadas para o centro de capacitação, onde haverá viveiros de mudas, horta comunitária e criações de animais.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 32]

O projeto	prevê	que,	a partir da atividade das famílias (...),	elas serão deslocadas para (...)
Sensor	Mental	Phenomenon	Circumstance	Phenomenon
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 2 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 33]

[No] centro de capacitação, (...)	haverá	viveiros de mudas, horta comunitária e criações de animais
Circumstance	Existential	Existent
Theme	Rheme	

[12] Cada núcleo tem ainda uma área de dois hectares para plantar para subsistência. Outra área maior, em volta, será de trabalho para produção coletiva.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 34]

Cada núcleo	tem	uma área de dois hectares para plantar para subsistência
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 35]

Outra área maior, em volta,	será	de trabalho para produção coletiva
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[13] Haverá ainda escola, creche, farmácia, espaço cultural e igrejas. Só a escola está em construção.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 36]

Haverá	(...) escola, creche, farmácia, espaço cultural e igrejas
Existential	Existent
Theme	Rheme

[Text 2 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 37]

Só a escola	está	em construção
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[14] Quando sair um destino definitivo para essas 400 famílias, a idéia é que o local continue como "laboratório" para outros sem-terra. O local não tem prazo nem local definidos para o assentamento. Por enquanto, os sem-terra urbanos ainda sobrevivem de doações e de uma cesta básica do governo, com quatro itens: arroz, feijão, farinha e fubá.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 38]

Quando	sair	um destino definitivo para essas 400 famílias
Circumstance	Material	Actor
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 39]

A idéia	é	que o local continue como "laboratório" para outros sem-terra
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 40]

O Incra	não tem	prazo nem local definidos	para o assentamento
Carrier	Relational	Attribute	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 2 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 41]

Por enquanto,	os sem-terra urbanos	(...) sobrevivem	de doações e de uma cesta básica do (...)
	Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 2 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 42]

[A] cesta básica do governo	[tem]	quatro itens: arroz, feijão, farinha e fubá	
Carrier	Relational	Attribute	
Theme	Rheme		

Text #2

Sem-terra urbanos completam um ano

TOTALS

Total number of words in the text:	512 words
Total number of clauses analysed in the text:	42 clauses
Total number of occurrences of process types:	
Material:	20 Material Processes
Mental:	02 Mental Processes
Relational:	15 Relational Processes
Behavioural:	00 Behavioural Processes
Verbal:	02 Verbal Processes
Existential:	03 Existential Processes

Text #3

QUESTÃO AGRÁRIA *Ministério do Desenvolvimento Agrário diz registrar apenas 12 ações do movimento pelo país*

MST anuncia 65 invasões em 5 Estados

da Agência Folha e da Sucursal de Brasília

[1] A prometida onda de invasões do MST na semana das comemorações dos 500 anos do Descobrimento ganhou impulso ontem, dia do quarto aniversário do massacre de 19 sem-terra em Eldorado do Carajás (PA). O movimento contabilizou 65 invasões em cinco Estados – 55 só em Pernambuco.

[2] A assessoria de imprensa do Ministério do Desenvolvimento Agrário informou ontem que o órgão tinha o registro de apenas 12 invasões nos cinco Estados.

[3] O MST (Movimento dos Trabalhadores Rurais Sem Terra) havia anunciado em março que faria 500 invasões pelo país. O MST invadiu ainda o prédio da superintendência do Inbra em Salvador.

[4] A data marcou ainda o retomo do dirigente José Rainha Júnior ao comando de ações de massa. Após quase dois anos na retaguarda e menos de duas semanas depois de ser absolvido em um julgamento por homicídio, ele liderou a invasão da fazenda São João, em Teodoro Sampaio (710 km a oeste de São Paulo), no Pontal do Paranapanema.

[5] Segundo Rainha, cerca de 800 famílias estão na área e “não pretendem sair”. A Polícia Militar diz que são 300 famílias.

[6] A propriedade, de 714 hectares, pertence a Ricardo Pedrosa Percetti, filiado à UDR (União Democrática Ruralista).

[7] O clima de tensão, por enquanto, é notado na guerra verbal entre dirigentes da UDR e do MST. Rainha avalia que pode haver confronto. “O conflito está anunciado, não tem conversa. Os fazendeiros estão armados.”

[8] Tânia Tenório de Faria, presidente da UDR, rebate: “Eles pretendem fazer 500 invasões. Vamos ver se a gente consegue fazer 500 reações. Eles vão ter problemas, com certeza”.

[9] Outras quatro áreas foram invadidas dentro do Estado – municípios de Galha, Jacaré, Barretos e Serra Azul.

[10] O Ministério do Desenvolvimento Agrário registrou apenas duas invasões em São Paulo, em Teodoro Sampaio e Jacaré

[11] A direção do MST em Pernambuco anunciou ter invadido pelo menos 55 propriedades em todas as regiões do Estado.

[12] O maior número de invasões teria ocorrido na Zona da Mata sul. O MST afirma que 23 propriedades foram tomadas por sem-terra na região, grande produtora de cana-de-açúcar.

[13] Das 55 áreas, três teriam sido desocupadas ainda ontem, duas delas por seguranças das propriedades e uma por policiais.

[14] Em Barreiros, a Polícia Civil despejou os invasores do engenho Una. Segundo o policial Valdercy Leite, o sem-terra Almir Xavier foi detido durante a invasão por desacato à autoridade. Ele foi interrogado e liberado.

[15] O superintendente interino do Incra no Estado, Roosevelt Gonçalves, classificou as invasões realizadas ontem de "atos políticos".

[16] "O MST sabe que não temos como vistoriar tudo", disse. "Não há pessoal nem dinheiro para o que eles querem", afirmou.

[17] A sede do Incra em Salvador, na **Bahia**, foi invadida por 100 sem-terra pela manhã.

[18] Armados com facões, eles reivindicavam uma audiência com o ministro da (sic) Raul Jungmann (Desenvolvimento Agrário) para discutir a liberação de recursos para a reforma agrária na Bahia e a nomeação de um novo superintendente para o Incra do Estado.

[19] Os sem-terra passaram toda a tarde em audiência com o superintendente-adjunto do Incra, Luiz Gugé, e continuavam no órgão até a conclusão desta edição.

[20] Em **Minas Gerais**, 150 famílias invadiram a fazenda Horto da Liberdade, em Mateus Leme, região metropolitana de Belo Horizonte.

[21] Duas fazendas foram invadidas por cerca de 145 famílias de sem-terra no norte do **Espírito Santo**.

[22] Na **Paraíba**, o Comando da Polícia Militar informou que 80 famílias invadiram, nas tardes de anteontem e ontem, as fazendas Curtume e Jacuri.

[23] Para o ministério, só ocorreram invasões no Espírito Santo (2 fazendas), em Minas Gerais (uma fazenda), em Pernambuco (7 fazendas) e em Mato Grosso do Sul.

Text #3

MST anuncia 65 invasões em 5 Estados

[1] A prometida onda de invasões do MST na semana das comemorações dos 500 anos do Descobrimento ganhou impulso ontem, dia do quarto aniversário do massacre de 19 sem-terra em Eldorado do Carajás (PA). O movimento contabilizou 65 invasões em cinco Estados – 55 só em Pernambuco

[Text 3 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 1]

A prometida onda de invasões (...)	ganhou	impulso	ontem, dia do quarto aniversário do massacre (...)
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 2]

O movimento	contabilizou	65 invasões	em cinco Estados – 55 só em Pernambuco
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[2] A assessoria de imprensa do Ministério do Desenvolvimento Agrário informou ontem que o órgão tinha o registro de apenas 12 invasões nos cinco Estados

[Text 3 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 3]

A assessoria de imprensa (...)	informou	ontem	que o órgão tinha o registro de apenas 12 (...)
Sayer	Verbal	Circumstance	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme		

[3] O MST (Movimento dos Trabalhadores Rurais Sem Terra) havia anunciado em março que faria 500 invasões pelo país. O MST invadiu ainda o prédio da superintendência do Incra em Salvador

[Text 3 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 4]

O MST (...)	havia anunciado	em março	que faria 500 invasões pelo país
Sayer	Verbal	Circumstance	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 5]

O MST (...)	invadiu	(...) o prédio da superintendência do Incra	em Salvador
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[4] A data marcou ainda o retomo do dirigente José Rainha Júnior ao comando de ações de massa. Após quase dois anos na retaguarda e menos de duas semanas depois de ser absolvido em um julgamento por homicídio, ele liderou a invasão da fazenda São João, em Teodoro Sampaio (710 km a oeste de São Paulo), no Pontal do Paranapanema

[Text 3 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 6]

A data	marcou	(...) o retomo do dirigente José Rainha Júnior ao comando de ações de massa
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 7]

Após quase dois anos (...), ele	liderou	a invasão da fazenda São João,	em Teodoro Sampaio (...)
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[5] Segundo Rainha, cerca de 800 famílias estão na área e “não pretendem sair”. A Polícia Militar diz que são 300 famílias

[Text 3 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 8]

Segundo Rainha,	cerca de 800 famílias	estão	na área
Circumstance	Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 9]

[As famílias]	“não pretendem sair”
Actor	Material
Theme	Rheme

[Text 3 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 10]

A Polícia Militar	diz	que são 300 famílias
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[6] A propriedade, de 714 hectares, pertence a Ricardo Pedrosa Peretti, filiado à UDR (União Democrática Ruralista)

[Text 3 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 11]

A propriedade, de 714 hectares,	pertence	a Ricardo Pedrosa Peretti
Attribute	Relational	Carrier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 12]

Ricardo Pedrosa Peretti	[é] filiado	à UDR (União Democrática Ruralista)
Goal	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[7] O clima de tensão, por enquanto, é notado na guerra verbal entre dirigentes da UDR e do MST. Rainha avalia que pode haver confronto. “O conflito está anunciado, não tem conversa. Os fazendeiros estão armados.”

[Text 3 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 13]

O clima de tensão, (...)	é notado	na guerra verbal entre dirigentes da UDR e do MST
Phenomenon	Mental	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 14]

Rainha	avalia	que pode haver confronto
Senscr	Mental	Phenomenon
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 15]

“O conflito está anunciado, não tem conversa. Os fazendeiros estão armados.”	[diz]	[Rainha]
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[8] Tânia Tenório de Faria, presidente da UDR, rebate: “Eles pretendem fazer 500 invasões. Vamos ver se a gente consegue fazer 500 reações. Eles vão ter problemas, com certeza”

[Text 3 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 16]

Tânia Tenório de Faria, (...) rebate:	“Eles pretendem fazer 500 invasões”		
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 16a]

[Tânia Tenório de Faria] rebate:	“Vamos ver se a gente consegue fazer 500 reações”		
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 16b]

[Tânia Tenório de Faria] rebate:]	Eles vão ter problemas, com certeza”		
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 17]

Tânia Tenório de Faria	[é]	presidente da UDR	
Identified	Relational	Identifier	
Theme	Rheme		

[9] Outras quatro áreas foram invadidas dentro do Estado – municípios de Galha, Jacareí, Barretos e Serra Azul

[Text 3 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 18]

Outras quatro áreas	foram invadidas	dentro do Estado – municípios de Galha, Jacareí, Barretos e Serra Azul	
Goal	Material	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme		

[10] O Ministério do Desenvolvimento Agrário registrou apenas duas invasões em São Paulo, em Teodoro Sampaio e Jacareí

[Text 3 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 19]

O Ministério (...) registrou	(...) duas invasões	em São Paulo, em Teodoro Sampaio e (...)	
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[11] A direção do MST em Pernambuco anunciou ter invadido pelo menos 55 propriedades em todas as regiões do Estado

[Text 3 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 20]

A direção do MST	em Pernambuco	anunciou	ter invadido pelo menos 55 propriedades em todas as (...)
Sayer	Circumstance	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme		

[12] O maior número de invasões teria ocorrido na Zona da Mata sul. O MST afirma que 23 propriedades foram tomadas por sem-terra na região, grande produtora de cana-de-açúcar

[Text 3 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 21]

O maior número de invasões	teria ocorrido	na Zona da Mata sul	
Actor	Material	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 22]

O MSI afirma que 23 propriedades foram tomadas por sem-terra na região

Sayer Verbal Verbiage

Theme Rheme

[Text 3 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 23]

[A região] [é] grande produtora de cana-de-açúcar

Carrier Relational Attribute

Theme Rheme

[13] Das 55 áreas, três teriam sido desocupadas ainda ontem, duas delas por seguranças das propriedades e uma por policiais

[Text 3 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 24]

Das 55 áreas, três teriam sido desocupadas ainda ontem

Circumstance Goal Material Circumstance

Theme Rheme

[Text 3 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 24a]

[Duas áreas] [teriam sido desocupadas] por seguranças da propriedade

Goal Material Actor

Theme Rheme

[Text 3 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 24b]

[Uma área] [teria sido desocupada] por policiais

Goal Material Actor

Theme Rheme

[14] Em Barreiros, a Polícia Civil despejou os invasores do engenho Una. Segundo o policial Valderéz Leite, o sem-terra Almir Xavier foi detido durante a invasão por desacato à autoridade. Ele foi interrogado e liberado

[Text 3 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 25]

Em Barreiros, a Polícia Civil despejou os invasores do engenho Una

Circumstance Actor Material Goal Circumstance

Theme Rheme

[Text 3 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 26]

Segundo o policial Valderéz (...), o sem-terra Almir Xavier foi detido durante a invasão por desacato à (...)

Circumstance Goal Material Circumstance

Theme Rheme

[Text 3 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 27]

Ele foi interrogado

Receiver Verbal

Theme Rheme

[Text 3 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 28]

[Ele] [foi] liberado

Goal Material

Theme Rheme

[15] O superintendente interino do Inera no Estado, Roosevelt Gonçalves, classificou as invasões realizadas ontem de “atos políticos”

[Text 3 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 29]

O superintendente interino do Inera no Estado			classificou	as invasões realizadas ontem de “atos políticos”	
Actor		Material	Goal		
Theme		Rheme			

[Text 3 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 30]

O superintendente interino do Inera no Estado			[é]	Roosevelt Gonçalves	
Identifier		Relational	Identified		
Theme		Rheme			

[16] “O MST sabe que não temos como vistoriar tudo”, disse. “Não há pessoal nem dinheiro para o que eles querem”, afirmou

[Text 3 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 31]

“O MST sabe que não temos como vistoriar tudo”,			disse.	[Roosevelt Gonçalves]	
Verbiage		Verbal	Sayer		
Theme		Rheme			

[Text 3 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 32]

“Não há pessoal nem dinheiro para o que eles querem”,			afirmou	[Roosevelt Gonçalves]	
Verbiage		Verbal	Sayer		
Theme		Rheme			

[17] A sede do Inera em Salvador, na **Bahia**, foi invadida por 100 sem-terra pela manhã

[Text 3 - Paragraph 17 - Clause 33]

A sede do Inera	em Salvador, na Bahia ,	foi invadida	por 100 sem-terra	pela manhã
Goal	Circumstance	Material	Actor	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[18] Armados com facões, eles reivindicavam uma audiência com o ministro da (sic) Raul Jungmann (Desenvolvimento Agrário) para discutir a liberação de recursos para a reforma agrária na Bahia e a nomeação de um novo superintendente para o Inera do Estado

[Text 3 - Paragraph 18 - Clause 34]

Armados com facões,		eles	reivindicavam	uma audiência com o ministro da (sic) Raul Jungmann	
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal		
Theme	Rheme				

[Text 3 - Paragraph 18 - Clause 35]

[Uma audiência para]	discutir	a liberação de recursos para a reforma agrária na Bahia			
	Material	Goal			
	Theme	Rheme			

[Text 3 - Paragraph 18 - Clause 35a]

[Uma audiência para]	[discutir]	a nomeação de um novo superintendente para o Inera do Estado			
	Material	Goal			
	Theme	Rheme			

[19] Os sem-terra passaram toda a tarde em audiência com o superintendente-adjunto do Incra, Luiz Gugé, e continuavam no órgão até a conclusão desta edição

[Text 3 - Paragraph 19 - Clause 36]

Os sem-terra	passaram	toda a tarde	em audiência com o superintendente-adjunto do Incra	
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 3 - Paragraph 19 - Clause 37]

O superintendente-adjunto do Incra	[é]	Luiz Gugé		
Identifier	Relational	Identified		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 3 - Paragraph 19 - Clause 38]

Os sem-terra	continuavam	no órgão	até a conclusão desta edição	
Carrier	Relational	Attribute	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme			

[20] Em **Minas Gerais**, 150 famílias invadiram a fazenda Horto da Liberdade, em Mateus Leme, região metropolitana de Belo Horizonte

[Text 3 - Paragraph 20 - Clause 39]

Em Minas Gerais ,	150 famílias	invadiram	a fazenda Horto da Liberdade	em Mateus Leme, região (...)
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[21] Duas fazendas foram invadidas por cerca de 145 famílias de sem-terra no norte do **Espírito Santo**

[Text 3 - Paragraph 21 - Clause 40]

Duas fazendas	foram invadidas	por cerca de 145 famílias de sem-terra	no norte do Espírito Santo	
Goal	Material	Actor	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme			

[22] Na **Paraíba**, o Comando da Polícia Militar informou que 80 famílias invadiram, nas tardes de antemão e ontem, as fazendas Curtume e Jacuri

[Text 3 - Paragraph 22 - Clause 41]

Na Paraíba ,	o Comando da Polícia Militar	informou	que 80 famílias invadiram, nas tardes de (...)	
Circumstance	Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage	
Theme	Rheme			

[23] Para o ministério, só ocorreram invasões no Espírito Santo (2 fazendas), em Minas Gerais (uma fazenda), em Pernambuco (7 fazendas) e em Mato Grosso do Sul

[Text 3 - Paragraph 23 - Clause 42]

Para o ministério,	só ocorreram	invasões	no Espírito Santo (2 fazendas), em Minas Gerais (...)	
Circumstance	Material	Actor	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme			

Text #3

MST anuncia 65 invasões em 5 Estados

TOTALS

Total number of words in the text: 623 words

Total number of clauses analysed in the text: 42 clauses

Total number of occurrences of process types:

Material: 22 Material Processes

Mental: 02 Mental Processes

Relational: 07 Relational Processes

Behavioural: 00 Behavioural Processes

Verbal: 11 Verbal Processes

Existential: 00 Existential Processes

Text #4

COMEMORAÇÃO *Presidente critica “grupos infiltrados para criar violência”
e chama MST de não-democrático***Festa não é convite a ‘velório’, diz FHC**

WILLIAM FRANÇA da Sucursal de Brasília

- [1] O presidente Fernando Henrique Cardoso afirmou ontem que “a festa dos 500 anos não deve ser um convite a um velório”, numa referência aos protestos que estão sendo organizados em Porto Seguro, no dia 22. FHC anunciou que manterá sua visita a Porto Seguro e que “não há baderneiro capaz de enfrentar a autoridade de um presidente democraticamente eleito”.
- [2] A **Folha** apurou que FHC pediu à área de segurança do governo que evite, a todo custo, que ocorram confrontos sérios que possam levar algum sem-terra ou índio à morte durante os festejos dos 500 anos do Descobrimento.
- [3] Um assessor do presidente disse à **Folha** que o presidente teme que haja um cadáver e que ele seja transformado em mártir pelos setores contrários ao governo e que estão organizando protestos durante as comemorações.
- [4] O porta-voz da Presidência, Georges Lamazière, afirmou que FHC “não aceita que grupos busquem se infiltrar em manifestações pacíficas de outros grupos, inclusive visando a perturbá-las e a criar situações de violência”.
- [5] Na avaliação do Palácio do Planalto, os manifestantes – em especial o MST (Movimento dos Trabalhadores Rurais Sem Terra) – estão trabalhando justamente com esse intuito.
- [6] Esse possível cadáver serviria como bandeira contra o governo tanto internamente quanto no exterior, num momento em que o país tenta se livrar da pecha de desrespeitar os direitos humanos.
- [7] Durante os festejos em Porto Seguro são esperados cerca de 350 jornalistas, boa parte vinda do exterior. Haverá transmissões das comemorações por emissoras de TV de Portugal, Áustria e Chile, além da CNN norte-americana.
- [8] Lamazière disse que, “na verdade, a questão do MST é outra” e definiu, na visão do governo, como são as ações do grupo: “É um movimento que está se desviando da legalidade democrática, que esqueceu sua motivação principal – que era a reforma agrária –, e que passou a ser um grupo de protestos organizados”.
- [9] O ministro-chefe do Gabinete de Segurança Institucional, general Alberto Cardoso, disse pela manhã que a segurança de FHC em Porto Seguro “preocupa a todos os brasileiros” e que o MST “está fazendo o que sempre fez”.
- [10] Segundo o porta-voz, o presidente também disse apoiar a decisão do ministro do Desenvolvimento Agrário, Raul Jungmann, de não receber o MST para conversar. “O movimento não foi recebido ontem porque não cumpriu sua parte no acordo”.

Pedido a partidos

- [11] FHC pediu, segundo o porta-voz, “que os partidos democráticos, sejam da base do governo ou de oposição, repilam as manifestações violentas que ferem as regras da convivência democrática e o respeito devido ao direito de cada segmento da sociedade de se manifestar pacificamente”.
- [12] O presidente respondeu ainda a uma correspondência que recebeu de parlamentares de oposição, liderados pela senadora Marina Silva (PT-AC). Na carta, os parlamentares pediam que o governo respeite as manifestações públicas durante os festejos. “A propósito, o presidente reitera que sempre foi a favor das manifestações pacíficas, mas que não se deve ultrapassar o limite que separa a democracia da baderna.”

Colaborou Daniela Nahass, free-lance para a Folha

Text #4

Festa não e convite a 'velório', diz FHC

[1] O presidente Fernando Henrique Cardoso afirmou ontem que “a festa dos 500 anos não deve ser um convite a um velório”, numa referência aos protestos que estão sendo organizados em Porto Seguro, no o dia 22. FHC anunciou que manterá sua visita a Porto Seguro e que “não há baderneiro capaz de enfrentar a autoridade de um presidente democraticamente eleito”

[Text 4 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 1]

O presidente Fernando Henrique Cardoso afirmou ontem que “a festa dos 500 anos não deve (...)”,			
Sayer	Verbal	Circumstance	Verbiage
Theme		Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 2]

[Protestos] estão sendo organizados em Porto Seguro, no o dia 22		
Goal	Material	Circumstance
Theme		Rheme

[Text 4 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 3]

FHC anunciou que manterá sua visita a Porto Seguro		
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme		Rheme

[Text 4 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 3a]

[FHC] [anunciou] que “não há baderneiro capaz de enfrentar a autoridade de um presidente (...)”		
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme		Rheme

[2] A **Folha** apurou que FHC pediu à área de segurança do governo que evite, a todo custo, que ocorram confrontos sérios que possam levar algum sem-terra ou índio à morte durante os festejos dos 500 anos do Descobrimento

[Text 4 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 4]

A Folha apurou que FHC (...)		
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme		Rheme

[Text 4 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 5]

FHC pediu à área de segurança do governo que evite, a todo custo, que ocorram confrontos sérios (...)			
Sayer	Verbal	Receiver	Verbiage
Theme		Rheme	

[3] Um assessor do presidente disse à **Folha** que o presidente teme que haja um cadáver e que ele seja transformado em mártir pelos setores contrários ao governo e que estão organizando protestos durante as comemorações

[Text 4 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 6]

Um assessor do presidente disse à Folha que o presidente teme que haja um cadáver e que ele (...)			
Sayer	Verbal	Receiver	Verbiage
Theme		Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 7]

[O cadáver]	seja transformado	em mártir	pelos setores contrários ao governo
Goal	Material	Circumstance	Actor
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 4 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 8]

[Setores contrários ao governo]	estão organizando	protestos	durante as comemorações
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[4] O porta-voz da Presidência, Georges Lamazière, afirmou que FHC “não aceita que grupos busquem se infiltrar em manifestações pacíficas de outros grupos, inclusive visando a perturbá-las e a criar situações de violência”

[Text 4 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 9]

Georges Lamazière, (...)	afirmou	que FHC “não aceita que grupos busquem se infiltrar em (...)”
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 10]

O porta-voz da Presidência	[é]	Georges Lamazière
Identidier	Relational	Identified
Theme	Rheme	

[5] Na avaliação do Palácio do Planalto, os manifestantes – em especial o MST (Movimento dos Trabalhadores Rurais Sem Terra) – estão trabalhando justamente com esse intuito

[Text 4 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 11]

Na avaliação do Palácio do Planalto,	os manifestantes (...)	estão trabalhando	justamente com esse intuito
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[6] Esse possível cadáver serviria como bandeira contra o governo tanto internamente quanto no exterior, num momento em que o país tenta se livrar da pecha de desrespeitar os direitos humanos

[Text 4 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 12]

Esse possível cadáver	serviria	como bandeira	contra o governo tanto internamente quanto no exterior, (...)
Identified	Relational	Identifier	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 4 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 13]

Num momento em que	o país	tenta se livrar	da pecha de desrespeitar os direitos humanos
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[7] Durante os festejos em Porto Seguro são esperados cerca de 350 jornalistas, boa parte vinda do exterior. Haverá transmissões das comemorações por emissoras de TV de Portugal, Áustria e Chile, além da CNN norte-americana

[Text 4 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 14]

Durante os festejos em Porto Seguro	são esperados	cerca de 350 jornalistas
Circumstance	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 15]

Boa parte	vinda	do exterior
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 16]

Haverá	transmissões das comemorações	por emissoras de TV de Portugal, Austria e Chile, além (...)
Existential	Existent	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[8] Lamazière disse que, “na verdade, a questão do MST é outra” e definiu, na visão do governo, como são as ações do grupo: “É um movimento que está se desviando da legalidade democrática, que esqueceu sua motivação principal – que era a reforma agrária –, e que passou a ser um grupo de protestos organizados”

[Text 4 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 17]

Lamazière	disse	que, “na verdade, a questão do MST é outra”
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 18]

[Lamazière]	definiu,	na visão do governo, como são as ações do grupo: “É um movimento que está se (...)”	
Sayer	Verbal	Circumstance	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme		

[9] O ministro-chefe do Gabinete de Segurança Institucional, general Alberto Cardoso, disse pela manhã que a segurança de FHC em Porto Seguro “preocupa a todos os brasileiros” e que o MST “está fazendo o que sempre fez”

[Text 4 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 19]

O ministro-chefe do Gabinete de Segurança Institucional	[é]	[o] general Alberto Cardoso
Identifier	Relational	Identified
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 20]

Alberto Cardoso	disse	pela manhã	que a segurança de FHC em Porto Seguro “preocupa a (...)”
Sayer	Verbal	Circumstance	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 4 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 20a]

[Alberto Cardoso]	[disse]	[pela manhã]	“que o MST “está fazendo o que sempre fez”
Sayer	Verbal	Circumstance	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme		

[10] Segundo o porta-voz, o presidente também disse apoiar a decisão do ministro do Desenvolvimento Agrário, Raul Jungmann, de não receber o MST para conversar. “O movimento não foi recebido ontem porque não cumpriu sua parte no acordo”

[Text 4 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 21]

Segundo o porta-voz,	o presidente (...)	disse	apoiar a decisão do ministro do Desenvolvimento (...)
Circumstance	Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 4 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 22]

[O ministro do Desenvolvimento Agrário	[é]	Raul Jungmann
Identifier	Relational	Identified
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 23]

[O porta-voz]	[disse]	"O movimento não foi recebido ontem porque não cumpriu sua (...)"	
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage	
Theme	Rheme		

[11] FHC pediu, segundo o porta-voz, "que os partidos democráticos, sejam da base do governo ou de oposição, repilam as manifestações violentas que ferem as regras da convivência democrática e o respeito devido ao direito de cada segmento da sociedade de se manifestar pacificamente"

[Text 4 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 24]

FHC	pediu,	segundo o porta-voz,	"que os partidos democráticos, sejam da base do governo ou (...)"
Sayer	Verbal	Circumstance	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 4 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 24a]

[FHC]	[pediu,]	[segundo o porta-voz,]	"o respeito devido ao direito de cada segmento da sociedade (...)"
Sayer	Verbal	Circumstance	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme		

[12] O presidente respondeu ainda a uma correspondência que recebeu de parlamentares de oposição, liderados pela senadora Marina Silva (PT-AC). Na carta, os parlamentares pediam que o governo respeite as manifestações públicas durante os festejos. "A propósito, o presidente reitera que sempre foi a favor das manifestações pacíficas, mas que não se deve ultrapassar o limite que separa a democracia da baderna."

[Text 4 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 25]

O presidente	respondeu (...)	a uma correspondência que recebeu de parlamentares de oposição, liderados (...)
Sayer	Verbal	Receiver
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 26]

Na carta,	os parlamentares pediam	que o governo respeite as manifestações públicas durante os festejos
Circumstance	Sayer	Verbal Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 27]

[O porta-voz]	[disse]	"A propósito, o presidente reitera que sempre foi a favor das manifestações (...)"	
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage	
Theme	Rheme		

Text #4

Festa não é convite a 'velório', diz FHC

TOTALS

Total number of words in the text: 521 words

Total number of clauses analysed in the text: 27 clauses

Total number of occurrences of process types:

Material: 08 Material Processes

Mental: 00 Mental Processes

Relational: 04 Relational Processes

Behavioural: 00 Behavioural Processes

Verbal: 14 Verbal Processes

Existential: 01 Existential Processes

Text #5

GASTOS SOCIAIS *Reforma agrária mobiliza recursos que seriam usados no financiamento da produção por ex-sem-terra***Assentamentos rurais sofrem favelização**

EDMILSON ZANETTI
DA AGÊNCIA FOLHA,
EM MIRANTE DO PARANAPANEMA

[1] A retenção de recursos para a reforma agrária está provocando a favelização do campo. O governo só aplicou 6,5% do previsto até o final de maio.

[2] No Pontal do Paranapanema (extremo oeste de São Paulo), áreas de assentamentos, que deveriam estar produzindo, abrigam famílias em barracos de lona plástica que dependem de doações para não passar fome.

[3] É o caso de Tereza dos Santos Freitas, 44, cuja vida pouco mudou depois que ela passou da condição de sem-terra que participou de 20 invasões a assentada pelo governo em Mirante do Paranapanema (640 km a oeste de SP).

[4] Em quatro anos, passou por 16 acampamentos à beira de estradas. Hoje ela divide um barraco de 12m² com o marido e dois netos, nos sete alqueires que ela recebeu do Incra (Instituto Nacional de Colonização e Reforma Agrária) em novembro de 1998, no assentamento Paulo Freire.

[5] Assentada, ela recebeu pouco mais de R\$1.400 de fomento, uma ajuda do governo até começar a produzir. Com o dinheiro, comprou duas vacas que garantem o leite dos netos. A família sobrevive da aposentadoria do marido, um salário mínimo.

[6] Sem recursos, ela engrossou a massa dos novos "com-terra" que bloqueou dez agências bancárias recentemente, para pressionar o governo por liberação de créditos.

[7] A Folha apurou que o Incra aplicou, até o final de maio, o equivalente a 6,5% dos R\$ 881,4 milhões previstos para serem gastos com programas. Dos R\$ 104,8 milhões para investimento em infra-estrutura em assentamentos, só 1,1% foi executado.

[8] Não foram liberados os R\$ 150,8 milhões aprovados para aquisição de imóveis rurais, via Banco da Terra.

Pontal

[9] No Pontal, uma das regiões mais conflituosas do país, assentamentos apresentam aspectos de grandes favelas, com barracos dispersos em sítios de até dez alqueires.

[10] Pesquisa do Itesp (Instituto de Terras do Estado de São Paulo), responsável pela implementação da reforma agrária no Estado, revela que apenas 16,72% das famílias vivem em casas de alvenaria.

[11] Segundo o Incra, a região abriga 4.866 famílias assentadas em 78 projetos. Para o Itesp, são 4.151 famílias em 76 projetos.

[12] Um terço dos assentados mora em casa de madeira e 8,28% continuam em barracos de lona, segundo o órgão estadual.

[13] Já o MST (Movimento dos Trabalhadores Rurais Sem Terra) estima que um quarto do total de assentados, ou mais de mil famílias, ainda vive debaixo de lona plástica.

[14] O estudo do Itesp mostra que 45% dos assentados usam água de cacimba, 4% se abastecem em minas ou ribeirões e 2% dependem de carros-pipas. Mais de 60% não possuem energia elétrica.

[15] A Agência Folha percorreu oito assentamentos em três cidades da região na quarta-feira passada. Em nenhum foi liberado crédito para habitação, custeio ou investimento neste ano. Em todos havia barracos de lona e muita miséria.

[16] A situação dos vizinhos de Tereza é um pouco pior: nove pessoas vivem amontoadas em um barraco de 10 metros por 5 metros.

[17] "Dona" de sete alqueires, Maria Aparecida de Lima, 35, diz ficar feliz quando os sete filhos vão para a escola.

[18] "Lá eles têm o que comer. Aqui às vezes não tem nem arroz." Sem crédito para plantar, a família vive de doações de parentes e vizinhos e dos R\$ 8 diários que o marido ganha quando arruma serviço em propriedades vizinhas.

[19] Das 59 famílias assentadas no Paulo Freire, somente uma mora em casa de madeira. As demais são de lona plástica.

[20] Um ano e meio depois do reconhecimento do projeto, somente na semana passada o Incra enviou técnicos para fazer a demarcação oficial dos lotes. No país, o órgão dispõe de R\$ 18 milhões para o trabalho, mas só executou 9,6% até maio.

Texto #5

Assentamentos rurais sofrem favelização

[1] A retenção de recursos para a reforma agrária está provocando a favelização do campo. O governo só aplicou 6,5% do previsto até o final de maio

[Text 5 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 1]

A retenção de recursos para a reforma agrária			está provocando	a favelização do campo	
Actor		Material		Goal	
Theme			Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 2]

O governo (...)		aplicou	6,5%	do previsto até o final de maio	
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance		
Theme		Rheme			

[2] No Pontal do Paranapanema (extremo oeste de São Paulo), áreas de assentamentos, que deveriam estar produzindo, abrigam famílias em barracos de lona plástica que dependem de doações para não passar fome

[Text 5 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 3]

No Pontal do Paranapanema (...)		áreas de assentamentos, (...)		abrigam	famílias	em barracos de lona plástica	
Circumstance		Actor		Material	Goal	Circumstance	
Theme			Rheme				

[Text 5 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 4]

[As famílias]		dependem	de doações	para não passar fome		
Beneficiary	Material	Actor	Circumstance			
Theme		Rheme				

[Text 5 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 5]

[As áreas de assentamentos]		deveriam estar produzindo				
Actor		Material				
Theme		Rheme				

[3] É o caso de Tereza dos Santos Freitas, 44, cuja vida pouco mudou depois que ela passou da condição de sem-terra que participou de 20 invasões a assentada pelo governo em Mirante do Paranapanema (640 km a oeste de SP)

[Text 5 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 6]

É		o caso de Tereza dos Santos Freitas				
Existential		Existent				
Theme		Rheme				

[Text 5 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 7]

Tereza dos Santos Freitas		[tem]	44 [anos]			
Carrier		Relational	Attribute			
Theme		Rheme				

[Text 5 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 8]

[Sua] vida	pouco	mudou	depois que ela passou da condição de sem-terra (...) a assentada (...)			
Actor	Circumstance	Material	Circumstance			
Theme		Rheme				

[Text 5 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 9]

Tereza dos Santos Freitas	participou	de 20 invasões
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[4] Em quatro anos, passou por 16 acampamentos à beira de estradas. Hoje ela divide um barraco de 12m² com o marido e dois netos, nos sete alqueires que ela recebeu do Incra (Instituto Nacional de Colonização e Reforma Agrária) em novembro de 1998, no assentamento Paulo Freire

[Text 5 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 10]

Em quatro anos,	[Tereza]	passou	por 16 acampamentos à beira de estradas
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 11]

Hoje	ela	divide	um barraco de 12m ²	com o marido e dois netos, nos sete alqueires
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 5 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 12]

[Os] sete alqueires	ela	recebeu	do Incra (...) em novembro de 1998, no assentamento Paulo Freire
Goal	Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[5] Assentada, ela recebeu pouco mais de R\$1.400 de fomento, uma ajuda do governo até começar a produzir. Com o dinheiro, comprou duas vacas que garantem o leite dos netos. A família sobrevive da aposentadoria do marido, um salário mínimo

[Text 5 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 13]

Assentada,	ela	recebeu	pouco mais de R\$1.400 de fomento, uma ajuda do governo até (...)
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 14]

Com o dinheiro,	[ela]	comprou	duas vacas que garantem o leite dos netos
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 15]

A família	sobrevive	da aposentadoria do marido, um salário mínimo
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[6] Sem recursos, ela engrossou a massa dos novos "com-terra" que bloqueou dez agências bancárias recentemente, para pressionar o governo por liberação de créditos

[Text 5 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 16]

Sem recursos,	ela	engrossou	a massa dos novos "com-terra"
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 17]

A massa dos novos "com-terra"	bloqueou	dez agências bancárias	recentemente
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 18]

A massa dos novos "com-terra"	pressionou	o governo	por liberação de crédito
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[7] A Folha apurou que o Inbra aplicou, até o final de maio, o equivalente a 6,5% dos R\$ 881,4 milhões previstos para serem gastos com programas. Dos R\$ 104,8 milhões para investimento em infra-estrutura em assentamentos, só 1,1% foi executado

[Text 5 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 19]

A Folha	apurou	que (...)
Actor	Material	
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 20]

O Inbra	aplicou,	até o final de maio,	o equivalente a 6,5% dos R\$ 881,4 milhões
Actor	Material	Circumstance	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 21]

R\$ 881,4 milhões	[estão] previstos para serem gastos	com programas
Goal	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 22]

Dos R\$ 104,8 milhões para investimento em infra-estrutura em assentamentos, só	1,1%	foi executado
Circumstance	Goal	Material
Theme	Rheme	

[8] Não foram liberados os R\$ 150,8 milhões aprovados para aquisição de imóveis rurais, via Banco da Terra

[Text 5 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 23]

Não foram liberados	os R\$ 150,8 milhões aprovados para aquisição de imóveis rurais, via Banco da Terra
Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme

[9] No Pontal, uma das regiões mais conflituosas do país, assentamentos apresentam aspectos de grandes favelas, com barracos dispersos em sítios de até dez alqueires

[Text 5 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 24]

No Pontal, (...)	assentamentos	apresentam	aspectos de grandes favelas, com barracos dispersos em (...)
Circumstance	Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 25]

[O] Pontal	[é]	uma das regiões mais conflituosas do país
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[10] Pesquisa do Itesp (Instituto de Terras do Estado de São Paulo), responsável pela implementação da reforma agrária no Estado, revela que apenas 16,72% das famílias vivem em casas de alvenaria

[Text 5 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 26]

Pesquisa do Itesp (...), revela que apenas 16,72% das famílias (...)		
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 27]

[A] Pesquisa do Itesp	[é]	responsável pela implementação da reforma agrária no Estado	
Carrier	Relational	Attribute	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 28]

Apenas 16,72% das famílias vivem em casas de alvenaria			
Actor	Material	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme		

[11] Segundo o Incra, a região abriga 4.866 famílias assentadas em 78 projetos. Para o Itesp, são 4.151 famílias em 76 projetos

[Text 5 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 29]

Segundo o Incra,	a região	abriga	4.866 famílias assentadas em 78 projetos
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 30]

Para o Itesp,	são	4.151 famílias em 76 projetos	
Circumstance	Existential	Existent	
Theme	Rheme		

[12] Um terço dos assentados mora em casa de madeira e 8,28% continuam em barracos de lona, segundo o órgão estadual

[Text 5 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 31]

Um terço dos assentados	mora	em casa de madeira [segundo o órgão estadual]	
Actor	Material	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 32]

8,28%	continuam [morando]	em barracos de lona, segundo o órgão estadual	
Actor	Material	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme		

[13] Já o MST (Movimento dos Trabalhadores Rurais Sem Terra) estima que um quarto do total de assentados, ou mais de mil famílias, ainda vive debaixo de lona plástica

[Text 5 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 33]

[O] MST (...)	estima	que um quarto do total de assentados, (...), ainda vive debaixo de lona plástica	
Senser	Mental	Phenomenon	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 34]

Mais de mil famílias	[vivem]	debaixo de lona plástica
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[14] O estudo do Itesp mostra que 45% dos assentados usam água de cacimba, 4% se abastecem em minas ou ribeirões e 2% dependem de carros-pipas. Mais de 60% não possuem energia elétrica

[Text 5 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 35]

O estudo do Itesp	mostra	que 45% dos assentados (...)
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 36]

45% dos assentados	usam	água de cacimba
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 37]

4%	se abastecem	em minas ou ribeirões
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 38]

2%	dependem	de carros-pipas
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 39]

Mais de 60%	não possuem	energia elétrica
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[15] A Agência Folha percorreu oito assentamentos em três cidades da região na quarta-feira passada. Em nenhum foi liberado crédito para habitação, custeio ou investimento neste ano. Em todos havia barracos de lona e muita miséria

[Text 5 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 40]

A Agência Folha	percorreu	oito assentamentos	em três cidades da região na quarta-feira passada
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 41]

Em nenhum [assentamento]	foi liberado	crédito	para habitação, custeio ou investimento neste ano
Circumstance	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 42]

Em todos [assentamentos]	havia	barracos de lona e muita miséria
Circumstance	Existential	Existent
Theme	Rheme	

[16] A situação dos vizinhos de Tereza é um pouco pior: nove pessoas vivem amontoadas em um barraco de 10 metros por 5 metros

[Text 5 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 43]

A situação dos vizinhos de Tereza			é	um pouco pior		
Carrier		Relational		Attribute		
Theme			Rheme			

[Text 5 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 44]

Nove pessoas		vivem	amontoadas em um barraco de 10 metros por 5 metros			
Actor	Material	Circumstance				
Theme		Rheme				

[17] “Dona” de sete alqueires, Maria Aparecida de Lima, 35, diz ficar feliz quando os sete filhos vão para a escola

[Text 5 - Paragraph 17 - Clause 45]

[Maria Aparecida]		diz	ficar feliz quando os sete filhos vão para a escola			
Sayer		Verbal	Verbiage			
Theme		Rheme				

[Text 5 - Paragraph 17 - Clause 46]

Maria Aparecida de Lima		[tem]	35 [anos]			
Carrier		Relational		Attribute		
Theme			Rheme			

[Text 5 - Paragraph 17 - Clause 47]

[Maria Aparecida de Lima]		[é “Dona” de]	sete alqueires			
Carrier		Relational		Attribute		
Theme		Rheme				

[18] “Lá eles têm o que comer. Aqui às vezes não tem nem arroz.” Sem crédito para plantar, a família vive de doações de parentes e vizinhos e dos R\$ 8 diários que o marido ganha quando arruma serviço em propriedades vizinhas

[Text 5 - Paragraph 18 - Clause 48]

“Lá eles têm o que comer. Aqui às vezes não tem nem arroz.”		[diz]	[Maria Aparecida de Lima]			
Verbiage			Verbal		Sayer	
Theme			Rheme			

[Text 5 - Paragraph 18 - Clause 49]

Sem crédito para plantar,		a família	vive	de doações de parentes e vizinhos		
Circumstance		Actor	Material	Circumstance		
Theme		Rheme				

[Text 5 - Paragraph 18 - Clause 50]

[O marido]	[ganha]	[R\$ 8 diários]				
Actor	Material	Goal				
Theme		Rheme				

[Text 5 - Paragraph 18 - Clause 51]

Quando [O marido]		arruma	serviço	em propriedades vizinhas		
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance			
Theme		Rheme				

[19] Das 59 famílias assentadas no Paulo Freire, somente uma mora em casa de madeira. As demais são de lona plástica

[Text 5 - Paragraph 19 - Clause 52]

Das 59 famílias assentadas no Paulo Freire, (...)				uma	mora	em casa de madeira	
Circumstance			Actor	Material	Circumstance		
Theme			Rheme				

[Text 5 - Paragraph 19 - Clause 53]

As demais [casas]		são	de lona plástica				
Carrier	Relational	Attribute					
Theme		Rheme					

[20] Um ano e meio depois do reconhecimento do projeto, somente na semana passada o Inbra enviou técnicos para fazer a demarcação oficial dos lotes. No país, o órgão dispõe de R\$ 18 milhões para o trabalho, mas só executou 9,6% até maio

[Text 5 - Paragraph 20 - Clause 54]

Um ano e meio depois do reconhecimento (...)				o Inbra	enviou	técnicos	para fazer a demarcação (...)
Circumstance			Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance	
Theme			Rheme				

[Text 5 - Paragraph 20 - Clause 55]

No país,		o órgão	dispõe	de R\$ 18 milhões	para o trabalho		
Circumstance	Carrier	Relational	Attribute		Circumstance		
Theme		Rheme					

[Text 5 - Paragraph 20 - Clause 56]

[O órgão]	executou	9,6%	até maio				
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance				
Theme		Rheme					

Texto #5

Assentamentos rurais sofrem favelização

TOTALS

Total number of words in the text: 600 words

Total number of clauses analysed in the text: 56 clauses

Total number of occurrences of process types:

Material: 37 Material Processes

Mental: 01 Mental Processes

Relational: 12 Relational Processes

Behavioural: 00 Behavioural Processes

Verbal: 03 Verbal Processes

Existential: 03 Existential Processes

Text #6

QUESTÃO AGRÁRIA *Congresso em Brasília termina com diretrizes contra transgênicos e a favor de alianças com pequenos empresários***Reunião do MST prega invasão e queimada**

ELIANE SILVA DA AGÊNCIA FOLHA, EM BRASÍLIA

[1] Invadir latifúndios, identificar e queimar plantações de alimentos transgênicos, buscar alianças até com pequenos empresários e realizar a maior jornada de lutas da história do movimento em abril do próximo ano.

[2] Essas são as principais tarefas delegadas aos 11 mil sem-terra que participaram do 4º Congresso Nacional do MST (Movimento dos Trabalhadores Rurais Sem Terra), encerrado ontem em Brasília (DF).

[3] O grande ausente no congresso do MST foi o líder petista Luiz Inácio Lula da Silva, esperado desde segunda-feira. Lula esteve em Brasília, mas ignorou o encontro dos sem-terra.

Ausência de Lula

[4] “Não entendemos a ausência dele”, disse Gilberto Portes, da direção nacional do MST.

[5] Questionado se o aumento das invasões de terra ou a radicalização contra os transgênicos não vão gerar mais vítimas fatais no campo, o dirigente Jaime Amorim afirmou que durante 500 anos o pobre se curvou ao coronelismo.

[6] “Agora é hora de erguer a cabeça e virar soldados. Não vamos lutar para perder ou morrer, mas também não vamos deixar de lutar por medo de perder”, disse o líder sem terra.

[7] Na prática, as invasões de terra começam na próxima semana.

Sócio de FHC

[8] José Rainha Júnior, líder do MST na região de maior confronto agrário no Estado de São Paulo, disse que o primeiro ato dos militantes no Pontal do Paranapanema será a ocupação da fazenda Santa Maria, em Teodoro Sampaio, de propriedade da família de Jovelino Mineiro.

[9] O alvo foi escolhido porque Jovelino Mineiro é sócio do presidente Fernando Henrique Cardoso na fazenda Buritis, em Minas Gerais.

[10] O MST do Pontal já mantém há três meses 422 famílias acampadas frente à fazenda.

[11] Amorim disse que outras bandeiras importantes do movimento a partir de agora são a organização de uma consulta popular para que o brasileiro decida se o país deve ou não pagar a dívida externa.

Dívida externa

[12] A consulta sobre a dívida externa ocorre de 2 a 7 de setembro com apoio da CPT (Comissão Pastoral da Terra) e de outros movimentos populares.

[13] Além disso, os militantes levam a seus estados a orientação de eleger prefeitos progressistas e tornar a eleição deste ano um espaço de debate sobre a dívida externa, o problema agrário e a política econômica.

Texto #6

Reunião do MST prega invasão e queimada

[1] Invadir latifúndios, identificar e queimar plantações de alimentos transgênicos, buscar alianças até com pequenos empresários e realizar a maior jornada de lutas da história do movimento em abril do próximo ano

[Text 6 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 1]

Invadir	latifúndios
Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme

[Text 6 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 2]

Identificar (...)	plantações de alimentos transgênicos,
Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme

[Text 6 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 3]

Queimar	[plantações de alimentos transgênicos]
Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme

[Text 6 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 4]

Buscar	alianças	até com pequenos empresários
Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 5]

Realizar	a maior jornada	de lutas da história do movimento em abril do próximo ano
Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[2] Essas são as principais tarefas delegadas aos 11 mil sem-terra que participaram do 4º Congresso Nacional do MST (Movimento dos Trabalhadores Rurais Sem Terra), encerrado ontem em Brasília (DF)

[Text 6 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 6]

Essas	são	as principais tarefas
Identifier	Relational	Identified
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 7]

Tarefas	[foram] delegadas	aos 11 mil sem-terra que participaram do 4º Congresso Nacional do MST
Goal	Material	Beneficiary
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 8]

[O] 4º Congresso Nacional do MST (...)	[foi] encerrado	ontem em Brasília (DF)
Goal	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[3] O grande ausente no congresso do MST foi o líder petista Luiz Inácio Lula da Silva, esperado desde segunda-feira. Lula esteve em Brasília, mas ignorou o encontro dos sem-terra

[Text 6 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 9]

O grande ausente no congresso do MST	foi	o líder petista Luiz Inácio Lula da Silva
Identifier	Relational	Identified
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 10]

Luiz Inácio Lula da Silva	[era] esperado	desde segunda-feira
Goal	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 11]

Luiz Inácio Lula da Silva	ignorou	o encontro dos sem-terra
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[4] "Não entendemos a ausência dele", disse Gilberto Portes, da direção nacional do MST

[Text 6 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 12]

"Não entendemos a ausência dele",	disse	Gilberto Portes
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 13]

Gilberto Portes	[é]	da direção nacional do MST
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[5] Questionado se o aumento das invasões de terra ou a radicalização contra os transgênicos não vão gerar mais vítimas fatais no campo, o dirigente Jaime Amorim afirmou que durante 500 anos o pobre se curvou ao coronelismo

[Text 6 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 14]

Jaime Amorim	[foi] questionado	se o aumento das invasões de terra ou a radicalização contra os (...)
Receiver	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 15]

[O] aumento das invasões de terra ou a radicalização (...)	não vão gerar	mais vítimas fatais	no campo
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 16]

O dirigente	[é]	Jaime Amorim
Identifier	Relational	Identified
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 17]

Jaime Amorim	afirmou	que durante 500 anos o pobre se curvou ao coronelismo
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 18]

Durante 500 anos	o pobre	se curvou	ao coronelismo
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[6] “Agora é hora de erguer a cabeça e virar soldados. Não vamos lutar para perder ou morrer, mas também não vamos deixar de lutar por medo de perder”, disse o líder sem terra

[Text 6 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 19]

“Agora é hora de erguer a cabeça e virar soldados”	[disse]	[o líder sem terra]
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 19a]

“Não vamos lutar para perder ou morrer, mas também (...)”	[disse]	[o líder sem terra]
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 19b]

“Não vamos deixar de lutar por medo de perder”,	disse	o líder sem terra
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[7] Na prática, as invasões de terra começam na próxima semana

[Text 6 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 20]

[As] invasões de terra	começam	na próxima semana
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[8] José Rainha Júnior, líder do MST na região de maior confronto agrário no Estado de São Paulo, disse que o primeiro ato dos militantes no Pontal do Paranapanema será a ocupação da fazenda Santa Maria, em Teodoro Sampaio, de propriedade da família de Jovelino Mineiro

[Text 6 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 21]

[José Rainha Júnior]	[é]	líder do MST	na região de maior confronto agrário no Estado de São Paulo
Identified	Relational	Identifier	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 22]

[A região de maior confronto agrário no Estado de São Paulo]	[é]	[o] Pontal do Paranapanema
Identifier	Relational	Identified
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 23]

José Rainha Júnior, (...) disse	que o primeiro ato dos militantes no Pontal do Paranapanema será a (...)
Sayer	Verbal Verbiage
Theme	Rheme

[Text 6 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 24]

O primeiro ato dos militantes (...)	será	a ocupação da fazenda Santa Maria,	em Teodoro Sampaio
Identified	Relational	Identifier	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 25]

[A] fazenda Santa Maria	em Teodoro Sampaio	[é] de propriedade [/pertence]	da/[a] família de Jovelino (...)
Carrier	Circumstance	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme		

[9] O alvo foi escolhido porque Jovelino Mineiro é sócio do presidente Fernando Henrique Cardoso na fazenda Buritis, em Minas Gerais

[Text 6 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 26]

O alvo	foi escolhido	porque Jovelino Mineiro (...)
Goal	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 27]

Jovelino Mineiro	é	sócio do presidente Fernando Henrique Cardoso	na fazenda Buritis, em (...)
Carrier	Relational	Attribute	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[10] O MST do Pontal já mantém há três meses 422 famílias acampadas frente à fazenda

[Text 6 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 28]

O MST do Pontal	(...) mantém	há três meses	422 famílias acampadas frente à fazenda
Actor	Material	Circumstance	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[11] Amorim disse que outras bandeiras importantes do movimento a partir de agora são a organização de uma consulta popular para que o brasileiro decida se o país deve ou não pagar a dívida externa

[Text 6 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 29]

Amorim	disse	que outras bandeiras importantes do movimento a partir de agora são a organização (...)
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[12] A consulta sobre a dívida externa ocorre de 2 a 7 de setembro com apoio da CPT (Comissão Pastoral da Terra) e de outros movimentos populares

[Text 6 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 30]

A consulta sobre a dívida externa	ocorre	de 2 a 7 de setembro com apoio da CPT (...)	e de outros (...)
Actor	Material	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme		

[13] Além disso, os militantes levam a seus estados a orientação de eleger prefeitos progressistas e tornar a eleição deste ano um espaço de debate sobre a dívida externa, o problema agrário e a política econômica

[Text 6 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 31]

[Os] militantes	levam	a seus estados	a orientação de eleger prefeitos progressistas
Actor	Material	Circumstance	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 32]

[Os militantes]	[levam]	a seus estados	a orientação de tornar a eleição deste ano um espaço de (...)
Actor	Material	Circumstance	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

Texto #6

Reunião do MST prega invasão e queimada

TOTALS

Total number of words in the text: 397 words

Total number of clauses analysed in the text: 32 clauses

Total number of occurrences of process types:

Material: 17 Material Processes

Mental: 00 Mental Processes

Relational: 09 Relational Processes

Behavioural: 00 Behavioural Processes

Verbal: 06 Verbal Processes

Existential: 00 Existential Processes

The Guardian/The Observer

1999

Text #1

Promisedlands

[1] As land reform goes top of the agenda for the new Scottish Parliament, Ricky Ross travels to Brazil and finds stark parallels between the two countries' poorest peoples

Wednesday January 6, 1999

[2] The Movimento Sem Terra (MST) is the biggest direct action land-reform group in Latin America. It is working in all but two states in Brazil to secure land for landless people. One of the points of interest to us on a recent visit ChristianAid was to see how Brazilians were tackling one of their burning issues which is also relevant here in Scotland - land reform.

[3] Since the Devolution Act was passed and Scotland's parliament was secured, there has been a great deal of discussion about what legislation will be passed in the first session. It is now clear that land reform will be one of the first issues to be addressed at Holyrood. If you forget about the scale for a while (some of the unoccupied areas in Brazil are the size of Scotland) there is a similar point at issue in Brazil.

[4] Both countries have a rural community keen to stay working the land and both face a large land mass owned by a very small number of landlords. In Scotland this has led to the absurd situation where tenants whose occupancy may have gone back hundreds of years may face the prospect of having to organise management buy-outs to guarantee their future livelihoods.

[5] In Brazil things are dealt with in a more direct way. There they have a law which states that unproductive land which is lying fallow should be handed over to landless people. They also have a law which states that trespassing - cutting wire and fences on private property - can lead to prosecution.

[6] The MST tackle this legal paradox head on. They say that return of the unproductive land has a greater priority than the technical trespass law, and have actively encouraged more than 150,000 families to resettle over the last 14 years or so.

[7] This is not without cost. The Brazilian land owners are a very powerful group. It is common for occupations to end in violent expulsions and many people have lost their lives in the struggle. Nevertheless our visit to a 10-year-old settlement at Promissao in Sao Paulo state showed how their commitment could transform the lives of rural workers.

[8] Permanent housing, schools and health centres are all part of the settlement where we stayed. The fields surrounding it are full of corn, coffee, sugar, rice and between the houses are shady groves of mango trees. Bananas, pineapple, peppers and tomatoes are also produced in large numbers and the dairy produce is supplied by their own cattle herds. Compare this picture with the life of the slum dwellers of Sao Paulo who are without money for rent and no certainty of steady employment. MST offers a model of self-empowerment that promises real change to the lives of working people.

[9] If some of this is an inspiration to the tenants of Eigg and Knoydart estates in Scotland then I'm sure many other factors will seem to level things out a little. Clearly Brazil still has an enormous rural work force and even adjusting population figures would not give the Scottish situation the same importance. We in Scotland, however, can relate to the Brazilian model at three levels.

[10] Firstly, both MST and the tenants in the Highlands share a concern for how the land is being used. Since the sixties, attempts to regenerate the Highlands and Islands economy have not always been environmentally friendly: Scottish trout and salmon farming being the obvious example. Our tour round the settlement at Promissao witnessed the preparation that all MST farms are making for being completely organic by 2002.

[11] Secondly, we were told of a real desire by the farmers in Brazil to take on the coffee and sugar cartels and begin to demand fair prices for their produce. This, too, is an issue in Scotland where at present many farming communities are suffering because of livestock prices falling below any commercial break-even point. Both communities would relate to feeling the lack of control over how prices are set.

[12] Thirdly, we saw the very real solidarity that MST families on settled land have with their comrades who have just occupied new ground, or are preparing occupations and protests. Nothing in Promissao was achieved without enormous struggle.

[13] Deep-rooted commitment to solidarity is something still very much alive in Scottish consciousness. Over the last few years some of the more fiery civil disobedience has come from concerned Highlanders protesting over issues such as the Skye bridge tolls and Dounray.

[14] Before we left, we were invited to lunch with two of the oldest members of the settlement. They had been there for five years and still had their old wooden shack next door - now used as an outhouse - to show their journey from poverty to stability. As he passed the old house the farmer pulled out a dusty black sheet that had formerly covered their encampment home: 'This we keep to remind us of where we came from and what we achieved,' he told us.

[15] MST's motto is that our struggle is not over until the last landless family is settled on their own land. Anyone who is aware of the shocking history of Highland clearances and subsequent colonial misrule could not identify with that.

[16] Later the woman wanted to sing us a song which I recorded. She introduced it as a song which they sing when they are occupying the bank. 'Why occupy the bank?' we ask. 'The Government owed us money to build our school,' she replied, 'but they told us it wasn't their problem that the bank wouldn't release the funds, so we occupied the bank until the money was released.' One had the feeling this hadn't been the only occupation.

[17] There, then, in a nub is what we in Scotland can learn from MST today. Improving the lives of ordinary people will not happen until they take decisions for themselves and until the affluent hand back what has been taken from the poor. There is a lie at the heart of New Labour in this country which says that everyone can be better off and no sacrifice is necessary. On the red dusty tracks of Promissao - the Promised Land - I finally saw that lie tramped into the dirt.

[18] Ricky Ross was the lead singer of rock group Deacon Blue. He was asked to visit Brazil by ChristianAid Scotland.

Text #1

Promisedlands

Wednesday January 6, 1999

[1] As land reform goes top of the agenda for the new Scottish Parliament, Ricky Ross travels to Brazil and finds stark parallels between the two countries' poorest peoples

[Text 1 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 1]

As	land reform	goes	top of the agenda for the new Scottish Parliament
	Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 2]

Ricky Ross	travels	to Brazil
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 3]

[Ricky Ross]	finds	stark parallels	between the two countries' poorest peoples
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[2] The Movimento Sem Terra (MST) is the biggest direct action land-reform group in Latin America. It is working in all but two states in Brazil to secure land for landless people. One of the points of interest to us on a recent visit ChristianAid was to see how Brazilians were tackling one of their burning issues which is also relevant here in Scotland - land reform.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 4]

The Movimento Sem Terra (MST)	is	the biggest direct action land-reform group in Latin (...)
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 5]

It [MST]	is working	in all but two states in Brazil
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 5a]

[It / MST]	[is working]	to secure land for landless people
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 6]

One of the points of interest to us on a recent visit ChristianAid	was	to see how Brazilians (...)
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 7]

[Brazilians]	were tackling	one of their burning issues (...)
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 8]

[Their burning issue]	is	relevant	here in Scotland
Carrier	Relational	Attribute	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 8a]

[Their burning issue]	is	land reform
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[3] Since the Devolution Act was passed and Scotland's parliament was secured, there has been a great deal of discussion about what legislation will be passed in the first session. It is now clear that land reform will be one of the first issues to be addressed at Holyrood. If you forget about the scale for a while (some of the unoccupied areas in Brazil are the size of Scotland) there is a similar point at issue in Brazil.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 9]

Since	the Devolution Act	was passed	and (...)
	Goal	Material	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 10]

Scotland's parliament	was secured (...)
Goal	Material
Theme	Rheme

[Text 1 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 11]

There	has been	a great deal of discussion
	Existential	Existent
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 12]

What legislation	will be passed	in the first session
Goal	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 13]

It	is	clear
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 14]

Land reform	will be	one of the first issues to be addressed at Holyrood
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 15]

If	you	forget	about the scale for a while
	Senscr	Mental	Phenomenon
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 16]

Some of the unoccupied areas in Brazil	are	the size of Scotland
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 17]

There	is	a similar point at issue in Brazil
	Existential	Existent
Theme	Rheme	

[4] Both countries have a rural community keen to stay working the land and both face a large land mass owned by a very small number of landlords. In Scotland this has led to the absurd situation where tenants whose occupancy may have gone back hundreds of years may face the prospect of having to organise management buy-outs to guarantee their future livelihoods.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 18]

Both countries	have	a rural community keen to stay working the land
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 19]

Both [countries]	face	a large land mass owned by a very small number of landlords
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 20]

In Scotland	this	has led	to the absurd situation where tenants whose (...)
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 21]

[Tenants' occupancy]	may have gone back	hundreds of years
Actor	Material	Circumstances
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 22]

[Tenants' occupancy]	may face	the prospect of having to organise management buy-outs to guarantee (...)
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[5] In Brazil things are dealt with in a more direct way. There they have a law which states that unproductive land which is lying fallow should be handed over to landless people. They also have a law which states that trespassing - cutting wire and fences on private property - can lead to prosecution.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 23]

In Brazil	things	are dealt with	in a more direct way
Circumstance	Goal	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 24]

There [in Brazil]	they	have	a law which (...)
Circumstance	Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 25]

[The law]	states	that unproductive land which (...)
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 26]

[The land]	is lying	fallow
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 27]

[The land]	should be handed over	to landless people
Goal	Material	Beneficiary
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 28]

They [the Brazilians]	have	a law
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 29]

[The law]	states	that trespassing (...) can lead to prosecution
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 29a]

[The law]	states	[that] cutting wire and fences on private property [can lead to prosecution]
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[6] The MST tackle this legal paradox head on. They say that return of the unproductive land has a greater priority than the technical trespass law, and have actively encouraged more than 150,000 families to resettle over the last 14 years or so.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 30]

The MST	tackle	this legal paradox head on
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 31]

They	say	that return of the unproductive land has a greater priority than the technical trespass law
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 32]

[They]	have encouraged	more than 150,000 families (...)	over the last 14 years or so
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[7] This is not without cost. The Brazilian land owners are a very powerful group. It is common for occupations to end in violent expulsions and many people have lost their lives in the struggle. Nevertheless our visit to a 10-year-old settlement at Promissao in Sao Paulo state showed how their commitment could transform the lives of rural workers.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 33]

This [MST's attitude]	is not	without cost
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 34]

The Brazilian land owners	are	a very powerful group
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 35]

It	is	common
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 36]

[Occupations]	[end]	in violent expulsions and (...)
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 37]

Many people	have lost	their lives	in the struggle
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 38]

Nevertheless	our visit to a 10-year-old settlement at Promissao in Sao Paulo state	showed	how
	Actor	Material	Goal
Theme		Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 39]

Their commitment	could transform	the lives of rural workers
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[8] Permanent housing, schools and health centres are all part of the settlement where we stayed. The fields surrounding it are full of corn, coffee, sugar, rice and between the houses are shady groves of mango trees. Bananas, pineapple, peppers and tomatoes are also produced in large numbers and the dairy produce is supplied by their own cattle herds. Compare this picture with the life of the slum dwellers of Sao Paulo who are without money for rent and no certainty of steady employment. MST offers a model of self-empowerment that promises real change to the lives of working people.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 40]

Permanent housing, schools and health centres	are	all part of the settlement where we stayed
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 41]

The fields surrounding it [the settlement]	are	full of corn, coffee, sugar, rice
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 42]

Between the houses	are	shady groves of mango trees
Circumstance	Existential	Existent
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 43]

Bananas, pineapple, peppers and tomatoes	are produced	in large numbers
Goal	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 44]

The dairy produce	is supplied	by their own cattle herds
Goal	Material	Actor
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 45]

[You]	compare	this picture	with the life of the slum dwellers of Sao Paulo
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 46]

[The slum dwellers of Sao Paulo]	are	without money for rent and no certainty of steady (...)
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 47]

MST	offers	a model of self-empowerment
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 48]

[The model of self-empowerment]	promises	real change to the lives of working people
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[9] If some of this is an inspiration to the tenants of Eigg and Knoydart estates in Scotland then I'm sure many other factors will seem to level things out a little. Clearly Brazil still has an enormous rural work force and even adjusting population figures would not give the Scottish situation the same importance. We in Scotland, however, can relate to the Brazilian model at three levels.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 49]

If	some of this	is	an inspiration	to the tenants of Eigg and Knoydart estates in Scotland
	Identified	Relational	Identifier	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 50]

I	am	sure
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 51]

Many other factors	will seem to level [out]	things a little
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 52]

Clearly	Brazil	has	an enormous rural work force
	Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 53]

Even adjusting population figures	would not give	the Scottish situation	the same importance
Actor	Material	Beneficiary	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 54]

We	in Scotland	can relate	to the Brazilian model	at three levels
Carrier	Circumstance	Relational	Attribute	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[10] Firstly, both MST and the tenants in the Highlands share a concern for how the land is being used. Since the sixties, attempts to regenerate the Highlands and Islands economy have not always been environmentally friendly: Scottish trout and salmon farming being the obvious example. Our tour round the settlement at Promissao witnessed the preparation that all MST farms are making for being completely organic by 2002.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 55]

Firstly,	MST and the tenants	in the Highlands	share	a concern for how the land is (...)
	Actor	Circumstance	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 56]

Since the sixties,	attempts to regenerate (...) economy	have not always been	environmentally friendly
Circumstance	Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 57]

Scottish trout and salmon farming	being	the obvious example
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 58]

Our tour (...)	witnessed	the preparation that all MST farms are making for being completely organic (...)
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[11] Secondly, we were told of a real desire by the farmers in Brazil to take on the coffee and sugar cartels and begin to demand fair prices for their produce. This, too, is an issue in Scotland where at present many farming communities are suffering because of livestock prices falling below any commercial break-even point. Both communities would relate to feeling the lack of control over how prices are set.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 59]

Secondly,	we	were told	of a real desire by the farmers in Brazil to take on the coffee (...)
	Receiver	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 59a]

[Secondly,]	[we]	[were told]	[of a real desire by the farmers to]	begin to demand fair (...)
	Receiver	Verbal	Verbiage	
Theme		Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 60]

This	is	an issue	in Scotland where	
Carrier	Relational	Attribute	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 61]

At present	many farming communities	are suffering	because of livestock prices falling below (...)	
Circumstance	Behaver	Behavioural	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 62]

Both communities	would relate	to feeling the lack of control over how prices are set		
Carrier	Relational	Attribute		
Theme	Rheme			

[12] Thirdly, we saw the very real solidarity that MST families on settled land have with their comrades who have just occupied new ground, or are preparing occupations and protests. Nothing in Promissao was achieved without enormous struggle.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 63]

Thirdly,	we	saw	the very real solidarity that MST families on settled land have with (...)	
	Senser	Mental	Phenomenon	
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 64]

Their comrades [MST families]	have just occupied	new ground	
Actor	Material	Goal	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 64a]

[Their comrades - MST families]	are preparing	occupations and protests	
Actor	Material	Goal	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 65]

Nothing	in Promissao	was achieved	without enormous struggle	
Goal	Circumstance	Material	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme			

[13] Deep-rooted commitment to solidarity is something still very much alive in Scottish consciousness. Over the last few years some of the more fiery civil disobedience has come from concerned Highlanders protesting over issues such as the Skye bridge tolls and Dounray.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 66]

Deep-rooted commitment to solidarity	is	something still very much alive in Scottish (...)		
Attribute	Relational	Carrier		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 67]

Over the last few years	some of the more fiery civil disobedience	has come	from concerned Highlanders
Circumstance	Goal	Material	Actor
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 68]

[Over the last few years]	[concerned Highlanders]	have protested	over issues such as the Skye (...)
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[14] Before we left, we were invited to lunch with two of the oldest members of the settlement. They had been there for five years and still had their old wooden shack next door - now used as an outhouse - to show their journey from poverty to stability. As he passed the old house the farmer pulled out a dusty black sheet that had formerly covered their encampment home: 'This we keep to remind us of where we came from and what we achieved,' he told us.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 69]

Before	we	left, (...)
	Actor	Material
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 70]

We	were invited	to lunch	with two of the oldest members of the settlement
Beneficiary	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 71]

They	had been	there	for five years
Carrier	Relational	Attribute	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 72]

[They]	had	their old wooden shack next door
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 73]

[They]	[had]	[their old wooden shack]	to show their journey from poverty to stability
Carrier	Relational	Attribute	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 74]

Now	[their old wooden shack]	[is used]	as an outhouse
	Goal	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 75]

As	he	passed	the old house
	Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 76]

The farmer pulled out a dusty black sheet		
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 77]

[The dusty black sheet] had formerly covered their encampment home		
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 78]

'This we keep to remind us of where we came from and what we achieved'				he	told	us
Verbiage			Sayer	Verbal	Receiver	
Theme			Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 79]

'This we keep to remind us of where we came from and what we achieved'			
Goal	Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[15] MST's motto is that our struggle is not over until the last landless family is settled on their own land. Anyone who is aware of the shocking history of Highland clearances and subsequent colonial misrule could not identify with that.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 80]

MST's motto is that our struggle is not over until the last landless family is settled on their (...)		
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 81]

Anyone who is aware of the shocking history of Highland clearances and subsequent colonial (...)		
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[16] Later the woman wanted to sing us a song which I recorded. She introduced it as a song which they sing when they are occupying the bank. 'Why occupy the bank?' we ask. 'The Government owed us money to build our school,' she replied, 'but they told us it wasn't their problem that the bank wouldn't release the funds, so we occupied the bank until the money was released.' One had the feeling this hadn't been the only occupation.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 82]

Later the woman wanted to sing us a song			
	Senser	Mental	Phenomenon
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 83]

I recorded [the song]		
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 84]

She introduced it as a song			
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 85]

They [MST members]	sing	the song	[during the occupations]
Actor	Material	Range	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 86]

They	are occupying	the bank
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 87]

'Why occupy the bank?'	we [the visitors]	ask
Verbiage	Sayer	Verbal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 88]

'The Government owed us money to build our school.'	she	replied
Verbiage	Sayer	Verbal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 88a]

[She]	[replied]	'But they told us it wasn't their problem that the bank wouldn't release the funds, so (...)'
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 89]

['The Government]	[owed]	[us]	[money]	[to build our school,']
Actor	Material	Beneficiary	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 90]

['But]	[they]	[told]	[us]	[it wasn't their problem that the bank wouldn't release the (...)']
	Sayer	Verbal	Receiver	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 91]

['So]	[we]	[occupied]	[the bank]	[until the money was released']
	Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 92]

One	had	the feeling this hadn't been the only occupation
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[17] There, then, in a nub is what we in Scotland can learn from MST today. Improving the lives of ordinary people will not happen until they take decisions for themselves and until the affluent hand back what has been taken from the poor. There is a lie at the heart of New Labour in this country which says that everyone can be better off and no sacrifice is necessary. On the red dusty tracks of Promissao - the Promised Land - I finally saw that lie tramped into the dirt.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 17 - Clause 93]

There,	then, in a nub	is	what we in Scotland can learn from MST today
Identified	Circumstance	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 17 - Clause 94]

Improving the lives of ordinary people	will not happen	until (...)
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 17 - Clause 95]

They	take	decisions	for themselves
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 17 - Clause 96]

The affluent	hand back	what has been taken from the poor
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 17 - Clause 97]

There	is	a lie	at the heart of New Labour in this country
	Existential	Existent	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 17 - Clause 98]

[The lie]	says	that everyone can be better off and no sacrifice is necessary
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 17 - Clause 99]

On the red dusty tracks of (...)	I	saw	that lie tramped into the dirt
Circumstance	Senser	Mental	Phenomenon
Theme	Rheme		

[18] Ricky Ross was the lead singer of rock group Deacon Blue. He was asked to visit Brazil by ChristianAid Scotland.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 18 - Clause 100]

Rick Ross	was	the lead singer of rock group Deacon Blue
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 18 - Clause 101]

He	was asked	to visit Brazil	by ChristianAid Scotland
Receiver	Verbal	Verbiage	Sayer
Theme	Rheme		

Text #1

Promisedlands

TOTALS

Total number of words in the text: 1090 words

Total number of clauses analysed in the text: 101 clauses

Total number of occurrences of process types:

Material: 47 Material Processes

Mental: 04 Mental Processes

Relational: 33 Relational Processes

Behavioural: 01 Behavioural Process

Verbal: 12 Verbal Processes

Existential: 04 Existential Processes

Text #2

Rousseau revisited by Alternative Davos

Victoria Brittain on impetus of another global agenda

Monday February 1, 1999

[1] The World Economic Forum at Davos should be abolished, debt in the third world and Europe cancelled and the International Monetary Fund and World Bank replaced by a United Nations body, said the Alternative Davos group meeting at the weekend.

[2] The group included academics from Belgium, Switzerland, Egypt and the Lebanon. French lobbies represented the unemployed and homeless, with the French trade union federation, the CGT; there were leaders of the Brazilian land occupation movement, MST, and an organisation representing peasant farmers from 10 West African nations, with economists from South Korea, El Salvador and South Africa.

[3] Alternative Davos strongly criticised the admission last week by Claude Smadja of the World Economic Forum that the volatility of recent months had not been foreseen.

[4] 'Thousands of analysts have predicted their policies would lead to this and hundreds of books have been written predicting just this,' said Professor Samir Amin of the World Forum of Alternatives.

[5] 'The credibility of self-appointed power-brokers is exhausted. Why should they be in charge of the disaster they have created any longer?'

[6] One focus was the need to stop the encroachment of transnational capital on the political power of nation states. Many European groups joined the successful campaign last year against the proposed multilateral agreement on investment, MAI. Alternative Davos demanded that plans be abandoned to transfer MAI's agenda to the millennium round of the World Trade Organisation.

[7] The group also demanded the elimination of tax havens and the application of taxes on speculative financial transactions - as first proposed by Nobel prize-winning economist James Tobin, in 1972.

[8] 'Even fixed at the low level of 0.1 per cent, the Tobin tax would bring in \$100 billion a year,' said the French association for tax on financial transactions. 'It's time to go back to Jean-Jacques Rousseau and the idea of a social contract. We have to get away from the culture of competition,' said Prof Petrella of Louvain University.

[9] Mario Lill of the Brazilian landless movement said that the immediate impact of the IMF in Brazil had been a cut in social budgets and in investment in roads and schools. 'Under their guidance, 80 per cent of our industries have been privatised, the owners are non-Brazilians and their profit is exported.'

[10] He said 200,000 families had been given land last year but that in the same period, the Brazilian government had taken land from 400,000 families. An Alternative Davos initiative released a list of 24 conferences, demonstrations and marches over the next six months to press for changes in the world economic system.

[11] The impetus is building towards the June demonstrations in which direct-action groups aim to paralyse financial districts, such as the City, before the focus shifts to Cologne and the industrialised nations' summit, which will see a counter-summit and demonstration by Jubilee 2000 for the cancellation of the poorest countries' debt.

Text #2

Rousseau revisited by Alternative Davos

Monday February 1, 1999

[1] The World Economic Forum at Davos should be abolished, debt in the third world and Europe cancelled and the International Monetary Fund and World Bank replaced by a United Nations body, said the Alternative Davos group meeting at the weekend.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 1]

The World Economic Forum	at Davos	should be abolished, (...)
Goal	Circumstance	Material
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 2]

Debt	in the third world and Europe	[should be] cancelled and (...)
Goal	Circumstance	Material
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 3]

The International Monetary Fund and World Bank	[should be] replaced	by a United Nations body
Goal	Material	Actor
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 4]

The World Economic Forum (...) body,	said	the Alternative Davos group meeting	at the weekend.
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[2] The group included academics from Belgium, Switzerland, Egypt and the Lebanon. French lobbies represented the unemployed and homeless, with the French trade union federation, the CGT; there were leaders of the Brazilian land occupation movement, MST, and an organisation representing peasant farmers from 10 West African nations, with economists from South Korea, El Salvador and South Africa.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 5]

The group	included	academics from Belgium, Switzerland, Egypt and the Lebanon
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 6]

French lobbies	represented	the unemployed and homeless, with the French trade union federation, the (...)
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 7]

There	were	leaders of the Brazilian land occupation movement, MST
	Existential	Existent
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 7a]

[There]	[was]	an organisation representing peasant farmers from 10 West African nations
	Existential	Existent
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 7b]

[There]	[were]	economists from South Korea, El Salvador and South Africa
	Existential	Existent
Theme	Rheme	

[3] Alternative Davos strongly criticised the admission last week by Claude Smadja of the World Economic Forum that the volatility of recent months had not been foreseen.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 8]

Alternative Davos	criticised	the admission last week by Claude Smadja of the World Economic (...)
Sayer	Verbal	Target
Theme	Rheme	

[4] 'Thousands of analysts have predicted their policies would lead to this and hundreds of books have been written predicting just this,' said Professor Samir Amin of the World Forum of Alternatives.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 9]

'Thousands of analysts	have predicted	their policies would lead to this'
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 10]

'Hundreds of books	have been written	predicting just this,'
Goal	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 11]

'Thousands of (...) just this,'	said	Professor Samir Amin of the World Forum of Alternatives
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[5] 'The credibility of self-appointed power-brokers is exhausted. Why should they be in charge of the disaster they have created any longer?'

[Text 2 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 12]

'The credibility of self-appointed power-brokers	is	exhausted'
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 13]

'Why	should	they	be	in charge of the disaster they have created (...)?'
Circumstance	Relational	Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme			

[6] One focus was the need to stop the encroachment of transnational capital on the political power of nation states. Many European groups joined the successful campaign last year against the proposed multilateral agreement on investment, MAI. Alternative Davos demanded that plans be abandoned to transfer MAI's agenda to the millennium round of the World Trade Organisation.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 14]

One focus	was	the need to stop the encroachment of transnational capital on the political (...)
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 15]

Many European groups	joined	the successful campaign	last year against the proposed (...)
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 2 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 16]

Alternative Davos	demanded	that plans be abandoned to transfer MAP's agenda to the millennium (...)
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[7] The group also demanded the elimination of tax havens and the application of taxes on speculative financial transactions - as first proposed by Nobel prize-winning economist James Tobin, in 1972.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 17]

The group	demanded	the elimination of tax havens and (...)
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 17a]

[The group]	[also]	[demanded]	the application of taxes on speculative financial (...)
Sayer	Circumstance	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 2 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 18]

As first	proposed	by Nobel prize-winning economist James Tobin,	in 1972.
	Verbal	Sayer	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[8] 'Even fixed at the low level of 0.1 per cent, the Tobin tax would bring in \$100 billion a year,' said the French association for tax on financial transactions. 'It's time to go back to Jean-Jacques Rousseau and the idea of a social contract. We have to get away from the culture of competition,' said Prof Petrella of Louvain University.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 19]

'Even fixed at (...) in \$100 billion a year,'	said	the French association for tax on financial transactions
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 20]

'It's time to (...) get away from the culture of competition,'	said	Prof Petrella of Louvain University
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[9] Mario Lill of the Brazilian landless movement said that the immediate impact of the IMF in Brazil had been a cut in social budgets and in investment in roads and schools. 'Under their guidance, 80 per cent of our industries have been privatised, the owners are non-Brazilians and their profit is exported.'

[Text 2 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 21]

Mario Lill of the Brazilian landless movement	said	that the immediate impact of the IMF in Brazil (...)
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 22]

Under their guidance, 80 per cent of our industries have (...) and their profit is exported.			[he]	[said]
Verbiage	Sayer	Verbal		
Theme	Rheme			

[10] He said 200,000 families had been given land last year but that in the same period, the Brazilian government had taken land from 400,000 families. An Alternative Davos initiative released a list of 24 conferences, demonstrations and marches over the next six months to press for changes in the world economic system.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 23]

He	said	200,000 families had been given land last year but that in the same period, the (...)		
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 2 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 24]

An (...) initiative	released	a list of 24 conferences, demonstrations and marches	over the next six (...)	
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme			

[11] The impetus is building towards the June demonstrations in which direct-action groups aim to paralyse financial districts, such as the City, before the focus shifts to Cologne and the industrialised nations' summit, which will see a counter-summit and demonstration by Jubilee 2000 for the cancellation of the poorest countries' debt.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 25]

The impetus	is building	towards the June demonstrations		
Actor	Material	Circumstance		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 2 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 26]

Direct-action groups	aim to paralyse	financial districts, such as the City		
Actor	Material	Goal		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 2 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 27]

The focus	shifts	to Cologne and the industrialised nations' summit		
Actor	Material	Goal		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 2 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 28]

[Cologne and (...) nations' summit]	will see	a counter-summit and demonstration by Jubilee 2000 for (...)		
Senser	Mental	Phenomenon		
Theme	Rheme			

Text #2

Rousseau revisited by Alternative Davos

TOTALS

Total number of words in the text: 492 words

Total number of clauses analysed in the text: 28 clauses

Total number of occurrences of process types:

Material: 09 Material Processes

Mental: 01 Mental Processes

Relational: 05 Relational Processes

Behavioural: 00 Behavioural Processes

Verbal: 12 Verbal Processes

Existential: 01 Existential Processes

Text #3

High pressure

[1] As the world's political and economic powers met in the Swiss Alps last weekend, the tenets of their elitist faith were met with a serious challenge. Victoria Brittain reports

Wednesday February 3, 1999

[2] The setting was Davos in the Swiss Alps, where the prestigious annual meeting of the global financial elite was taking place last weekend. But this was the Alternative Davos meeting, the first time the world's economic and political powers had had to confront the intellectual challenge to their fundamental premises on their own doorstep.

[3] "What is at stake is the right to life - the right to water, housing, food," said Professor Riccardo Petrella, of Louvain University in Belgium. "This is what the battle over international financial institutions is all about. We need a new social contract which rejects the poverty created by the existing system."

[4] "The privatisation of education, the concentration of information systems, the control of intellectual property rights - all of these threaten a world in which the dominant powers control even how we conceive our world," he warned.

[5] Many economists and sociologists have long criticised the liberal world economic order, but they are now backed by some of the best organised mass movements in the Third World, such as the landless of Brazil (MST), Indian and West African farmers, and, with a new force, by substantial social movements in Europe, particularly in France.

[6] The brainchild of Ahmed Ben Bella, the former president of Algeria, the Alternative Davos meeting attacked the power of the multinational companies, the Bretton Woods institutions, and the speculators. They also called for the imposition of a tax on capital movements; the cancellation of all Third World and eastern and central European debt; the replacement of the International Monetary Fund and the World Bank with a democratic UN body.

[7] Mario Luis Lill, the MST leader, said his movement strongly opposed the WTO, which he described as being "for the submission of the poor of the world". In Brazil, he said, neo-liberalism had strengthened big landowners, but MST had now spread into 23 of 25 states, and had become a family movement, teaching literacy, opening 1,500 schools, working with various universities, opening pharmacies, training nurses, using alternative technology in agriculture.

[8] Similar work in developing peasants' lives and choices is being done by the 22,000-strong National Federation of Peasant Organisations (Fenop) in Burkina Faso.

[9] One of the MST and Fenop links in Europe is with farmers' movements, but also with the unemployed organisations in urban areas. "This used to be a hidden problem in rich countries, but since the 1980s unemployment has become a permanent and visible factor in our industrial societies, like homelessness and exclusion from society by having no papers," said one of the French organisers. "We're seeing the convergence of different struggles. It has become very easy to find the common language of struggle in Europe."

[10] Economist Susan George, one of the organisers of the campaign against the Multi-lateral Agreement on Investment (MAI), said: "Mrs Thatcher used to say that the market would solve everything, that There is No Alternative, but the truth is there are thousands of alternatives."

[11] The poorest 60 per cent of the world's population share just 4.5 per cent of the world's income, and 20 per cent of the richest share 83 per cent. Neither the market, nor any of the tenets of liberal economics can change this imbalance, but the pressure of popular resentment on many fronts is growing too strong to be ignored.

Text #3

High pressure

Wednesday February 3, 1999

[1] As the world's political and economic powers met in the Swiss Alps last weekend, the tenets of their elitist faith were met with a serious challenge. Victoria Britain reports

[Text 3 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 1]

As	the world's political and economic powers	met	in the Swiss Alps last weekend
	Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme		Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 2]

The tenets of their elitist faith	were met	with a serious challenge
Goal	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 3]

As the world's political and economic powers (...)	the tenets of their elitist (...)	Victoria Britain	reports
Verbiage		Sayer	Verbal
Theme		Rheme	

[2] The setting was Davos in the Swiss Alps, where the prestigious annual meeting of the global financial elite was taking place last weekend. But this was the Alternative Davos meeting, the first time the world's economic and political powers had had to confront the intellectual challenge to their fundamental premises on their own doorstep.

[Text 3 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 4]

The setting	was	Davos	in the Swiss Alps
Identified	Relational	Identifier	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 5]

The prestigious annual meeting of the global financial elite	was taking place	last weekend
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 6]

But	this	was	the Alternative Davos meeting
	Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 7]

The first time	the world's economic (...)	had had to confront	the intellectual challenge to their (...)
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[3] "What is at stake is the right to life - the right to water, housing, food," said Professor Riccardo Petrella, of Loudain University in Belgium. "This is what the battle over international financial institutions is all about. We need a new social contract which rejects the poverty created by the existing system."

[Text 3 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 8]

"What is at stake is the right to life (...),"			said	Professor Riccardo Petrella, of Loudain University (...)	
Verbiage		Verbal		Sayer	
Theme			Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 9]

[He]	[said]	"This is what the battle over international (...). We need a new social contract (...)"			
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage			
Theme	Rheme				

[4] "The privatisation of education, the concentration of information systems, the control of intellectual property rights - all of these threaten a world in which the dominant powers control even how we conceive our world," he warned.

[Text 3 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 10]

"The privatisation of education, the (...) - all of these threaten (...) our world,"			he	warned	
Verbiage			Sayer	Verbal	
Theme			Rheme		

[5] Many economists and sociologists have long criticised the liberal world economic order, but they are now backed by some of the best organised mass movements in the Third World, such as the landless of Brazil (MST), Indian and West African farmers, and, with a new force, by substantial social movements in Europe, particularly in France.

[Text 3 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 11]

Many economists and sociologists		have long criticised	the liberal world economic order		
Sayer		Verbal	Target		
Theme		Rheme			

[Text 3 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 12]

They	are now backed	by some of the best organised mass movements in the Third World, (...)			
Goal	Material	Actor			
Theme	Rheme				

[Text 3 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 12a]

[They]	[are now backed]	by (...) the landless of Brazil (MST), Indian and West African farmers, and (...)			
Goal	Material	Actor			
Theme	Rheme				

[Text 3 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 12b]

[They]	[are now backed]	by substantial social movements in Europe, particularly in France			
Goal	Material	Actor			
Theme	Rheme				

[6] The brainchild of Ahmed Ben Bella, the former president of Algeria, the Alternative Davos meeting attacked the power of the multinational companies, the Bretton Woods institutions, and the speculators. They also called for the imposition of a tax on capital movements; the cancellation of all Third World and eastern and central European debt; the replacement of the International Monetary Fund and the World Bank with a democratic UN body.

[Text 3 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 13]

The brainchild of (...) the Alternative Davos meeting	attacked	the power of the multinational (...)
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 14]

They	called for	the imposition of a tax on capital movements; the cancellation of all Third World (...)
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[7] Mario Luis Lill, the MST leader, said his movement strongly opposed the WTO, which he described as being "for the submission of the poor of the world". In Brazil, he said, neo-liberalism had strengthened big landowners, but MST had now spread into 23 of 25 states, and had become a family movement, teaching literacy, opening 1,500 schools, working with various universities, opening pharmacies, training nurses, using alternative technology in agriculture.

[Text 3 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 15]

Mario Luis Lill, the MST leader,	said	his movement strongly opposed the WTO, which he (...)
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 16]

In Brazil,	he	said,	neo-liberalism had strengthened big landowners
Circumstance	Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 17]

MST	had now spread	into 23 of 25 states
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 18]

[MST]	had become	a family movement
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 19]

[The family movement]	is teaching	literacy
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 20]

[The family movement]	is opening	1,500 schools
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 21]

[The family movement]	is working	with various universities
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 22]

[The family movement]	is opening	pharmacies
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 23]

[The family movement]	is training	nurses
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 24]

[The family movement]	is using	alternative technology in agriculture
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[8] Similar work in developing peasants' lives and choices is being done by the 22,000-strong National Federation of Peasant Organisations (Fenop) in Burkina Faso.

[Text 3 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 25]

Similar work in developing (...)	is being done	by the 22,000-strong National Federation of Peasant (...)
Goal	Material	Actor
Theme	Rheme	

[9] One of the MST and Fenop links in Europe is with farmers' movements, but also with the unemployed organisations in urban areas. "This used to be a hidden problem in rich countries, but since the 1980s unemployment has become a permanent and visible factor in our industrial societies, like homelessness and exclusion from society by having no papers," said one of the French organisers. "We're seeing the convergence of different struggles. It has become very easy to find the common language of struggle in Europe."

[Text 3 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 26]

One of the MST and Fenop links in Europe	is	with farmers' movements, but also with the (...)
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 27]

"This used to be a hidden problem in rich countries, but since (...)"	said	one of the French organisers
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 28]

[He]	[said]	"We're seeing the convergence of different struggles. It has become very easy to find (...)"
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[10] Economist Susan George, one of the organisers of the campaign against the Multi-lateral Agreement on Investment (MAI), said: "Mrs Thatcher used to say that the market would solve everything, that There Is No Alternative, but the truth is there are thousands of alternatives."

[Text 3 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 29]

Economist Susan George, (...)	said:	"Mrs Thatcher used to say that the market would solve (...)"
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[11] The poorest 60 per cent of the world's population share just 4.5 per cent of the world's income, and 20 per cent of the richest share 83 per cent. Neither the market, nor any of the tenets of liberal economics can change this imbalance, but the pressure of popular resentment on many fronts is growing too strong to be ignored.

[Text 3 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 30]

The poorest 60 per cent of the world's population			share	just 4.5 per cent of the world's income	
Actor		Material	Goal		
Theme			Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 31]

20 per cent of the richest		share	83 per cent		
Actor		Material	Goal		
Theme		Rheme			

[Text 3 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 32]

Neither the market, nor any of the tenets of liberal economics			can change	this imbalance	
Actor			Material	Goal	
Theme			Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 33]

The pressure of popular resentment on many fronts		is growing	too strong to be ignored		
Actor		Material	Circumstance		
Theme		Rheme			

Text #3

High pressure

TOTALS

Total number of words in the text: 583 words

Total number of clauses analysed in the text: 33 clauses

Total number of occurrences of process types:

Material: 18 Material Processes

Mental: 00 Mental Processes

Relational: 04 Relational Processes

Behavioural: 00 Behavioural Processes

Verbal: 10 Verbal Processes

Existential: 00 Existential Processes

Text #4

Making a life from the ground up

[1] Brazil's Rural Workers Movement says its occupation tactics have won land and dignity for up to 400,000 families.

By Alex Bellos in Novo Sarandi

Thursday May 20, 1999

[2] It hardly looks like the vanguard of a social revolution, but the Conoal cooperative's milk and crop depot at Novo Sarandi is exactly that. The farmyard buildings 200 miles inland from southern Brazil's main city, Porto Alegre, are the concrete result of a radical communist movement using capitalist tools to change people's lives all over Brazil.

[3] In 1985, almost 10,000 hectares (24,000 acres) of unproductive land here was invaded by 1,000 poor families, who squatted in shacks covered with binliners, until the government gave them land rights three years later.

[4] On assuming control, the ex-squatters set about turning the area into an agricultural cooperative. Now, they say, Conoal has an annual turnover of £8m, sells its products to food multinational Parmalat, and has transformed its inhabitants from dispossessed people on the fringes of society to moderately prosperous farmers.

[5] 'Before, we had nothing,' says Luiz Pilatti, 39, who was part of the original squat. 'Now [my family] has a nice house, a milk cow, car, a tractor, 15 hectares, a TV and a freezer.'

[6] The Novo Sarandi squat was one of the first actions of the Landless Rural Workers Movement (MST), which was founded in 1982 as the result of land rights campaigning in the southern state of Rio Grande do Sul. The movement has since spread through all Brazil and is now the largest direct action movement in Latin America.

[7] MST says that so far 300,000 to 400,000 families have been given land rights after squatting on unproductive land, and 75,000 are currently in rural squats waiting for approval under a constitutional law that asserts that unproductive land must be handed over to the people living on it.

[8] This has not been an easy process. In the first seven years of the decade there was an average of 46 deaths a year during conflicts between landless and landed, with most of the deaths on the landless side, MST officials say.

[9] The Marxist-run MST has succeeded in making land reform a very big political issue in Brazil, a country whose grossly unfair pattern of land ownership can be traced back to practices in the colonial era when the Portuguese crown handed over vast tracts to 14 'captains' in 1534. Today, 1% of all land holdings still cover 45% of the country.

[10] The government's own estimate of the number of 'landless' people living in abject poverty is 4.8m families or well over 10m people out of a national population 160m. The MST believes the number is much more.

[11] Even though the process of handing over land to occupiers has speeded up under the centrist government of President Fernando Henrique Cardoso, the MST is highly critical of his failure to introduce root-and-branch land reform, including financial help to farmers starting up.

[12] 'Even though Cardoso has seen more [people getting their land rights] he has also seen 400,000 small farmers sell off their land and move on during the same period because they couldn't make a living from it. He has done nothing for proper agrarian reform,' declares Milton Viana, the main press officer for MST.

[13] Novo Sarandi has prospered because the land there is very fertile, and its acceptance has been helped by Rio Grande do Sul's tradition within Brazil as a cradle of social reforms.

[14] The year after the first seeds were planted Novo Sarandi was already selling to local markets.

[15] But land in other states, particularly in the drought-plagued north-east where the political oligarchy is strongest has proved harder to farm at anything beyond subsistence levels.

[16] MST activists schooled in the movement in Rio Grande do Sul are sent to other areas to promote the fight.

[17] Milton Viana adds: 'Each state needs a different solution, in terms of organisation and technology. Some states need more financial help than others. This is something the government has never done.'

[18] 'In the north-east there is lots of money going for the drought, but this goes to the politicians who keep it in their pockets. This money never reaches the needy population.'

[19] MST activists are still occupying land but have also adopted new tactics that include invading public buildings and looting supermarkets. These aggressive measures have guaranteed publicity, but eroded the wealth of public support previously enjoyed by the movement.

[20] In Novo Sarandi the greatest benefit to the inhabitants goes deeper than the material dividends of working their own land in security. The people feel they have gained dignity after lives on the margins of society.

[21] 'I still feel a stigma from some people,' says Luiz, who was recently elected a local councillor. 'But it is changing and it will change.'

Text #4

Making a life from the ground up

Thursday May 20, 1999

[1] Brazil's Rural Workers Movement says its occupation tactics have won land and dignity for up to 400,000 families

[Text 4 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 1]

Brazil's Rural Workers Movement	says	its occupation tactics have won land and dignity for up to (...)	
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage	
Theme	Rheme		

[2] It hardly looks like the vanguard of a social revolution, but the Conoal cooperative's milk and crop depot at Novo Sarandi is exactly that. The farmyard buildings 200 miles inland from southern Brazil's main city, Porto Alegre, are the concrete result of a radical communist movement using capitalist tools to change people's lives all over Brazil.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 2]

It	looks like	the vanguard of a social revolution	
Identified	Relational	Identifier	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 4 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 3]

The Conoal cooperative's milk and crop depot	at Novo Sarandi	is	exactly that
Identified	Circumstance	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 4 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 4]

The farmyard buildings	200 miles inland from (...)	are	the concrete result of a radical (...)
Identified	Circumstance	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme		

[3] In 1985, almost 10,000 hectares (24,000 acres) of unproductive land here was invaded by 1,000 poor families, who squatted in shacks covered with binliners, until the government gave them land rights three years later.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 5]

In 1985,	almost 10,000 hectares (24,000 acres) of (...)	was invaded	by 1,000 poor families, (...)
Circumstance	Goal	Material	Actor
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 4 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 6]

[The families]	squatted	in shacks covered with binliners	
Actor	Material	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 4 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 7]

The government	gave	them	land rights	three years later
Actor	Material	Beneficiary	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[4] On assuming control, the ex-squatters set about turning the area into an agricultural cooperative. Now, they say, Conoal has an annual turnover of £8m, sells its products to food multinational Parmalat, and has transformed its inhabitants from dispossessed people on the fringes of society to moderately prosperous farmers.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 8]

On assuming control, the ex-squatters set about turning the area into an agricultural cooperative					
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme				

[Text 4 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 9]

Now, they say, Conoal has an annual turnover of £8m			
	Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 4 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 9a]

[Now,] [they] [say,] [Conoal] (...) sells its products to food multinational Parmalat			
	Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 4 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 9b]

[Now,] [they] [say,] [Conoal] (...) has transformed its inhabitants from dispossessed (...)			
	Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme		

[5] 'Before, we had nothing,' says Luiz Pilatti, 39, who was part of the original squat. Now [my family] has a nice house, a milk cow, car, a tractor, 15 hectares, a TV and a freezer.'

[Text 4 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 10]

'Before, we had nothing,' says Luiz Pilatti, 'Now [my family] has a nice house, (...), and a freezer.'			
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 4 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 11]

[Luiz Pilatti] [is] 39		
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 12]

[Luiz Pilatti] was part of the original squat		
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[6] The Novo Sarandi squat was one of the first actions of the Landless Rural Workers Movement (MST), which was founded in 1982 as the result of land rights campaigning in the southern state of Rio Grande do Sul. The movement has since spread through all Brazil and is now the largest direct action movement in Latin America.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 13]

The Novo Sarandi squat was one of the first actions of the Landless Rural Workers (MST)		
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 14]

[The MST]	was founded	in 1982 as the result of land rights campaigning in the southern state of (...)
Goal	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 15]

The movement	has since spread	through all Brazil and (...)
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 16]

[The movement]	is	the largest direct action movement in Latin America
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[7] MST says that so far 300,000 to 400,000 families have been given land rights after squatting on unproductive land, and 75,000 are currently in rural squats waiting for approval under a constitutional law that asserts that unproductive land must be handed over to the people living on it.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 17]

MST	says	that so far 300,000 to 400,000 families have been given land rights after squatting on (...)
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 17a]

[MST]	[says]	[that] 75,000 are currently in rural squats waiting for approval under a constitutional (...)
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 18]

[The constitutional law]	asserts	that unproductive land must be handed over to the people living on it
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[8] This has not been an easy process. In the first seven years of the decade there was an average of 46 deaths a year during conflicts between landless and landed, with most of the deaths on the landless side, MST officials say.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 19]

This has not been an easy process	[MST officials]	[say]
Verbiage	Sayer	Verbal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 20]

In the first seven years of the decade there was an average of 46 deaths a (...)	[MST officials]	[say]
Verbiage	Sayer	Verbal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 21]

There	was	an average of 46 deaths a year	during conflicts between landless and landed
	Existential	Existent	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[9] The Marxist-run MST has succeeded in making land reform a very big political issue in Brazil, a country whose grossly unfair pattern of land ownership can be traced back to practices in the colonial era when the Portuguese crown handed over vast tracts to 14 'captains' in 1534. Today, 1% of all land holdings still cover 45% of the country.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 22]

The Marxist-run MST	has succeeded in making	land reform a very big political issue in Brazil
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 23]

[Brazil's] grossly unfair pattern of land ownership	can be traced back	to practices in the colonial era
Goal	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 24]

[In the colonial era] (...)	the Portuguese crown	handed over	vast tracts to 14 'captains' in 1534
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 4 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 25]

Today,	1% of all land holdings	cover	45% of the country
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[10] The government's own estimate of the number of 'landless' people living in abject poverty is 4.8m families or well over 10m people out of a national population 160m. The MST believes the number is much more.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 26]

The government's own estimate of (...) abject poverty	is	4.8m families or well over 10m (...)
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 27]

The MST	believes	the number is much more
Senser	Mental	Phenomenon
Theme	Rheme	

[11] Even though the process of handing over land to occupiers has speeded up under the centrist government of President Fernando Henrique Cardoso, the MST is highly critical of his failure to introduce root-and-branch land reform, including financial help to farmers starting up.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 28]

Even though	the process (...)	has speeded up	under the centrist government of President (...)
	Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 4 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 29]

The MST	is	critical of his failure to introduce root-and-branch land reform, (...)
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[12] 'Even though Cardoso has seen more [people getting their land rights] he has also seen 400,000 small farmers sell off their land and move on during the same period because they couldn't make a living from it. He has done nothing for proper agrarian reform,' declares Milton Viana, the main press officer for MST.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 30]

'Even though Cardoso has seen more (...) nothing for proper agrarian reform,'			declares	Milton Viana
Verbiage		Verbal		Sayer
Theme		Rheme		

[Text 4 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 31]

Milton Viana	[is]	the main press officer for MST
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[13] Novo Sarandi has prospered because the land there is very fertile, and its acceptance has been helped by Rio Grande do Sul's tradition within Brazil as a cradle of social reforms.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 32]

Novo Sarandi	has prospered	because the land there is very fertile
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 33]

Its acceptance	has been helped	by Rio Grande do Sul's tradition within Brazil as a cradle of social reforms
Goal	Material	Actor
Theme	Rheme	

[14] The year after the first seeds were planted Novo Sarandi was already selling to local markets.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 34]

The year after the first seeds were planted	Novo Sarandi	was already selling	to local markets
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Beneficiary
Theme	Rheme		

[15] But land in other states, particularly in the drought-plagued north-east where the political oligarchy is strongest has proved harder to farm at anything beyond subsistence levels.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 35]

But	land in other states, (...)	has proved	harder to farm at anything beyond subsistence levels
	Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 4 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 36]

In the drought-plagued north-east where	the political oligarchy	is	strongest (...)
Circumstance	Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme		

[16] MST activists schooled in the movement in Rio Grande do Sul are sent to other areas to promote the fight.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 37]

MST activists schooled in the movement in Rio Grande (...)	are sent	to other areas to promote the fight
Goal	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[17] Milton Viana adds: 'Each state needs a different solution, in terms of organisation and technology. Some states need more financial help than others. This is something the government has never done.'

[Text 4 - Paragraph 17 - Clause 38]

Milton Viana	adds:	'Each state needs a different solution, in terms of organisation and technology.'
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 17 - Clause 38a]

[Milton Viana]	[adds:]	Some states need more financial help than others
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 17 - Clause 38b]

[Milton Viana]	[adds:]	This is something the government has never done'
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[18] 'In the north-east there is lots of money going for the drought, but this goes to the politicians who keep it in their pockets. This money never reaches the needy population.'

[Text 4 - Paragraph 18 - Clause 39]

'In the north-east there is lots of money going for the drought	[he]	[says/adds]
Verbiage	Sayer	Verbal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 18 - Clause 39a]

This [the money] goes to the politicians who keep it in their pockets	[he]	[says/adds]
Verbiage	Sayer	Verbal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 18 - Clause 39b]

This money never reaches the needy population'	[he]	[says/adds]
Verbiage	Sayer	Verbal
Theme	Rheme	

[19] MST activists are still occupying land but have also adopted new tactics that include invading public buildings and looting supermarkets. These aggressive measures have guaranteed publicity, but eroded the wealth of public support previously enjoyed by the movement.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 19 - Clause 40]

MST activists	are still occupying	land
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 19 - Clause 41]

[MST activists]	have also adopted	new tactics that include invading public buildings and looting (...)
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 19 - Clause 42]

These aggressive measures	have guaranteed	publicity
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 19 - Clause 43]

[These aggressive measures]	eroded	the wealth of public support previously enjoyed by the movement	
Actor	Material	Goal	
Theme	Rheme		

[20] In Novo Sarandi the greatest benefit to the inhabitants goes deeper than the material dividends of working their own land in security. The people feel they have gained dignity after lives on the margins of society.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 20 - Clause 44]

In Novo Sarandi	the greatest benefit (...)	goes	deeper than the material dividends of working (...)
Circumstance	Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 4 - Paragraph 20 - Clause 45]

The people	feel	they have gained dignity after lives on the margins of society	
Senser	Mental	Phenomenon	
Theme	Rheme		

[21] 'I still feel a stigma from some people,' says Luiz, who was recently elected a local councillor. 'But it is changing and it will change.'

[Text 4 - Paragraph 21 - Clause 46]

'I still feel a stigma from some people,'	says	Luiz	
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 4 - Paragraph 21 - Clause 47]

[Luiz]	was recently elected	a local councillor	
Identified	Relational	Identifier	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 4 - Paragraph 21 - Clause 48]

[Luiz]	[says]	'But it is changing and it will change.'	
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage	
Theme	Rheme		

Text #4

Making a life from the ground up

TOTALS

Total number of words in the text: 801 words

Total number of clauses analysed in the text: 48 clauses

Total number of occurrences of process types:

Material: 19 Material Processes

Mental: 02 Mental Processes

Relational: 14 Relational Processes

Behavioural: 00 Behavioural Processes

Verbal: 12 Verbal Processes

Existential: 01 Existential Processes

Text #5

150 policemen on trial for massacre of Brazilian peasants

Alex Bellos in Rio de Janeiro

Tuesday August 17, 1999

[1] The trial of 150 military policemen accused of taking part in the massacre of 19 Brazilian peasants at Eldorado do Carajas during a dispute over land rights opened yesterday in the Amazonian city of Belem.

[2] The massacre, in April 1996, marked a turning point in the struggle for land reform in Brazil, exposing to a world audience the country's social inequalities and the violence used to maintain them.

[3] Television cameras captured the police officers firing into a crowd of poor rural workers, led by the Landless Movement (MST), who were demonstrating on a road at Eldorado do Carajas, a small town in the northern state of Para.

[4] The Marxist MST is one of the largest and most effective grassroots movements in the world, responsible for securing land title for about a million peasants.

[5] The trial is the biggest in Brazilian history in terms of the numbers of defendants. The prosecution file runs to 8,000 pages and there will be 189 jury members for the 27 separate parts of the proceedings. The trial is expected to end in December.

[6] Yesterday 300 police officers were on duty at the court in Belem, the capital of Para, where 2,000 MST activists protested. Inside, the prosecution began its case against the two most senior officers accused - a major and a colonel.

[7] Despite the high profile given to the case, human rights observers doubt that justice will be done. Accusations against the police have been hard to bring to trial because evidence is tampered with and witnesses are not offered protection.

[8] Amnesty International says the police investigation at Eldorado do Carajas has been wilfully obstructive.

[9] Julia Rochester, an Amnesty campaigner for Brazil, said that police identification tags were removed and the victims' bodies were moved before forensic analysis could be undertaken.

[10] She said: "Our experience of the justice system in cases like this is that it is very rare to get a sound conviction."

[11] The massacre occurred when the military police tried to clear a main road occupied by about 1,200 MST members armed with sticks and scythes. The police allege that the demonstrators were firing guns: the MST denies it.

[12] One of the prosecution's main problems is that the large number of defendants make it hard to prove who was responsible for individual deaths. There is also the issue of the chain of command, which leads to the Para state governor, although he has not been accused of any offence.

[13] Outrage at the massacre forced President Fernando Henrique Cardoso to speed up the transfer of unproductive land to MST families. Between 300,000 and 400,000 families have already received title to small plots. But the government estimates that there are still 4.8m "landless" families living in abject poverty.

[14] More than 50% of Brazil's arable land is owned by 2% of the 160m population.

Text #5

150 policemen on trial for massacre of Brazilian peasants

Tuesday August 17, 1999

[1] The trial of 150 military policemen accused of taking part in the massacre of 19 Brazilian peasants at Eldorado do Carajas during a dispute over land rights opened yesterday in the Amazonian city of Belem.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 1]

The trial of 150 military policemen accused of (...) opened yesterday in the Amazonian city of Belem		
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 2]

150 military policemen [were] accused of taking part in the massacre of 19 Brazilian peasants at (...)		
Target	Verbal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[2] The massacre, in April 1996, marked a turning point in the struggle for land reform in Brazil, exposing to a world audience the country's social inequalities and the violence used to maintain them.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 3]

The massacre, in April 1996, marked a turning point in the struggle for land reform in Brazil			
Carrier	Circumstance	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 4]

[The massacre] [exposed] to a world audience the country's social inequalities and the violence (...)			
Actor	Material	Circumstance	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[3] Television cameras captured the police officers firing into a crowd of poor rural workers, led by the Landless Movement (MST), who were demonstrating on a road at Eldorado do Carajas, a small town in the northern state of Para.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 5]

Television cameras captured the police officers firing into a crowd of poor rural workers		
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

Text 5 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 6]

[The crowd of poor rural workers] was led by the Landless Movement (MST)		
Goal	Material	Actor
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 7]

[The crowd of poor rural workers] was demonstrating on a road at Eldorado do Carajas, a small town (...)		
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[4] The Marxist MST is one of the largest and most effective grassroots movements in the world, responsible for securing land title for about a million peasants.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 8]

The Marxist MST	is	one of the largest and most effective grassroots movements in the world	
Identified	Relational	Identifier	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 9]

[The Marxist MST]	[is]	responsible	for securing land title for about a million peasants
Carrier	Relational	Attribute	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[5] The trial is the biggest in Brazilian history in terms of the numbers of defendants. The prosecution file runs to 8,000 pages and there will be 189 jury members for the 27 separate parts of the proceedings. The trial is expected to end in December.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 10]

The trial	is	the biggest	in Brazilian history in terms of the numbers of defendants
Identified	Relational	Identifier	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 11]

The prosecution file	runs	to 8,000 pages	
Actor	Material	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 12]

There	will be	189 jury members	for the 27 separate parts of the proceedings
	Existential	Existent	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

Text 5 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 13]

The trial	is expected to end	in December	
Goal	Material	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme		

[6] Yesterday 300 police officers were on duty at the court in Belem, the capital of Para, where 2,000 MST activists protested. Inside, the prosecution began its case against the two most senior officers accused - a major and a colonel.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 14]

Yesterday	300 police officers	were on duty	at the court in Belem, the capital of Para
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 15]

[At the court in Belem]	2,000 MST activists	protested	
Circumstance	Actor	Material	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 16]

Inside,	the prosecution	began	its case	against the two most senior officers accused (...)
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[7] Despite the high profile given to the case, human rights observers doubt that justice will be done. Accusations against the police have been hard to bring to trial because evidence is tampered with and witnesses are not offered protection.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 17]

Despite the high profile given to the case,	human rights observers	doubt	that justice will be done
Circumstance	Senser	Mental	Phenomenon
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 18]

Accusations against the police	have been	hard to bring to trial
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 19]

Evidence	is	tampered with
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 20]

Witnesses	are not offered	protection
Beneficiary	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[8] Amnesty International says the police investigation at Eldorado do Carajas has been wilfully obstructive.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 21]

Amnesty International	says	the police investigation at Eldorado do Carajas has been wilfully (...)
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[9] Julia Rochester, an Amnesty campaigner for Brazil, said that police identification tags were removed and the victims' bodies were moved before forensic analysis could be undertaken.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 22]

Julia Rochester, (...),	said	that police identification tags were removed
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 22a]

[Julia Rochester, (...),]	[said]	the victims' bodies were moved before forensic analysis could be (...)
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 23]

[Julia Rochester]	[is]	an Amnesty campaigner for Brazil
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[10] She said: "Our experience of the justice system in cases like this is that it is very rare to get a sound conviction."

[Text 5 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 24]

She	said:	"Our experience of the justice system in cases like this is that it is very rare to get a (...)"
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[11] The massacre occurred when the military police tried to clear a main road occupied by about 1,200 MST members armed with sticks and scythes. The police allege that the demonstrators were firing guns: the MST denies it.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 25]

The massacre	occurred	when the military police tried to clear a main road occupied by about 1,200 (...)
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 26]

About 1,200 MST members	[were] armed	with sticks and scythes
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 27]

The police	allege	that the demonstrators were firing guns
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 28]

The MST	denies	it [having fired guns]
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[12] One of the prosecution's main problems is that the large number of defendants make it hard to prove who was responsible for individual deaths. There is also the issue of the chain of command, which leads to the Para state governor, although he has not been accused of any offence.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 29]

One of the prosecution's main problems	is	that the large number of defendants make it hard (...)
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 30]

There	is	the issue of the chain of command
	Existential	Existent
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 31]

[The chain of command]	leads	to the Para state governor
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 32]

[The Para state governor]	has not been accused	of any offence
Target	Verbal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[13] Outrage at the massacre forced President Fernando Henrique Cardoso to speed up the transfer of unproductive land to MST families. Between 300,000 and 400,000 families have already received title to small plots. But the government estimates that there are still 4.8m "landless" families living in abject poverty.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 33]

Outrage	at the massacre	forced	President Fernando Henrique Cardoso['s reaction]
Actor	Circumstance	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 5 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 34]

President Fernando Henrique Cardoso	[speeded up]	the transfer of unproductive land to MST families
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 35]

Between 300,000 and 400,000 families	have already received	title to small plots
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 36]

But	the government	estimates	that there are still 4.8m "landless" families living in abject poverty
	Senser	Mental	Phenomenon
Theme	Rheme		

[14] More than 50% of Brazil's arable land is owned by 2% of the 160m population.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 37]

More than 50% of Brazil's arable land	is owned	by 2% of the 160m population
Identifier	Relational	Identified
Theme	Rheme	

Text #5

150 policemen on trial for massacre of Brazilian peasants

TOTALS

Total number of words in the text: 488 words

Total number of clauses analysed in the text: 37 clauses

Total number of occurrences of process types:

Material: 17 Material Processes

Mental: 02 Mental Processes

Relational: 09 Relational Processes

Behavioural: 00 Behavioural Processes

Verbal: 07 Verbal Processes

Existential: 02 Existential Processes

Text #6

Officers 'guilty' of massacre go free

Alex Bellos in Rio de Janeiro

Friday, August 20, 1999

[1] A Brazilian court yesterday acquitted three senior military policemen of the massacre of 19 peasants - despite the jury's belief that the men were responsible for one of the most violent episodes in the country's recent history.

[2] The jury of seven men told the judge that while they were convinced Colonel Mario Pantoja, Major Jose Maria Oliveira and Captain Raimundo Almendra were guilty, there was not enough evidence to convict them.

[3] The police officers were in charge of troops who shot into a crowd of 2,500 landless farmworkers at Eldorado do Carajas in 1996, to break up a demonstration.

[4] The prosecutor, Marcello Freitas, attacked the verdict: "The judge asked the jurors if the defendants were guilty, and they said yes. He asked if they had committed bodily harm, and the jurors said yes."

[5] "Then he asked if there was sufficient proof to convict, and they said no."

[6] Mr Freitas said he would appeal against the acquittal.

[7] The jurors were apparently swayed by the defence's argument that, under Brazilian law, prosecutors must link victims to specific killers. The prosecution had countered that it was not necessary to "individualise" the crime because the police had acted collectively.

[8] The massacre in Para state focused international attention on human rights abuses in the Brazilian backlands, where confrontations between the landed minority and millions of dispossessed families are commonplace.

[9] Colonel Pantoja, Maj Oliveira and Captain Almendra were the first of 150 military police to be tried for the killings. The hearings in the Para city of Belem are due to run until December.

[10] Joao Pedro Stedile, leader of the Landless movement (MST), said the acquittal shamed the country. "The judge will have blood on his hands if more peasants are killed in Para," he said. "He has declared impunity for those who commit crimes in the countryside."

[11] After the verdict hundreds of MST supporters chanted "murderers, murderers", then charged through Belem throwing stones at police.

Text #6

Officers 'guilty' of massacre go free

Friday August 20, 1999

[1] A Brazilian court yesterday acquitted three senior military policemen of the massacre of 19 peasants - despite the jury's belief that the men were responsible for one of the most violent episodes in the country's recent history.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 1]

A Brazilian court	yesterday	acquitted	three senior military policemen	of the massacre of 19 (...)
Sayer	Circumstance	Verbal	Target	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 6 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 2]

The jury's belief	[is]	that the men were responsible for one of the most violent episodes in (...)
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[2] The jury of seven men told the judge that while they were convinced Colonel Mario Pantoja, Major Jose Maria Oliveira and Captain Raimundo Almendra were guilty, there was not enough evidence to convict them.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 3]

The jury of seven men	told	the judge	that while they were convinced Colonel Pantoja, Major (...)
Sayer	Verbal	Receiver	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 3a]

[The jury of seven men]	[told]	[the judge]	[that] there was not enough evidence to convict them
Sayer	Verbal	Receiver	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme		

[3] The police officers were in charge of troops who shot into a crowd of 2,500 landless farmworkers at Eldorado do Carajas in 1996, to break up a demonstration.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 4]

The police officers	were	in charge of troops
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 5]

[The troops]	shot	into a crowd of 2,500 landless farmworkers at Eldorado do Carajas in 1996
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 6]

[The troops]	[shot] to break up	a demonstration
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[4] The prosecutor, Marcello Freitas, attacked the verdict: "The judge asked the jurors if the defendants were guilty, and they said yes. He asked if they had committed bodily harm, and the jurors said yes."

[Text 6 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 7]

The prosecutor, Marcello Freitas,		attacked	the verdict
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 8]

"The judge	asked	the jurors	if the defendants were guilty
Sayer	Verbal	Target	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 9]

They	said	yes
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 10]

He	asked	if they had committed bodily harm
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 11]

The jurors	said	yes"
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[5] "Then he asked if there was sufficient proof to convict, and they said no."

[Text 6 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 12]

"Then	he	asked	if there was sufficient proof to convict, and they said no."
	Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme		

[6] Mr Freitas said he would appeal against the acquittal.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 13]

Mr Freitas	said	he would appeal against the acquittal
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[7] The jurors were apparently swayed by the defence's argument that, under Brazilian law, prosecutors must link victims to specific killers. The prosecution had countered that it was not necessary to "individualise" the crime because the police had acted collectively.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 14]

The jurors	were apparently swayed	by the defence's argument	that, under Brazilian law, prosecutors (...)
Senser	Mental	Phenomenon	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 15]

The prosecution	had countered	that it was not necessary to "individualise" the crime because the (...)
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 16]

The police	had acted	collectively
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[8] The massacre in Para state focused international attention on human rights abuses in the Brazilian backlands, where confrontations between the landed minority and millions of dispossessed families are commonplace.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 17]

The massacre in Para state	focused	international attention on human rights abuses in the Brazilian (...)
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 18]

[In the Brazilian backlands],	confrontations between the landed (...)	are	commonplace
Circumstance	Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme		

[9] Colonel Pantoja, Maj Oliveira and Captain Almendra were the first of 150 military police to be tried for the killings. The hearings in the Para city of Belem are due to run until December.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 19]

Colonel Pantoja, (...)	were	the first of 150 military police to be tried for the killings
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 20]

The hearings in the Para city of Belem	are due to run	until December
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[10] Joao Pedro Stedile, leader of the Landless movement (MST), said the acquittal shamed the country. "The judge will have blood on his hands if more peasants are killed in Para," he said. "He has declared impunity for those who commit crimes in the countryside."

[Text 6 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 21]

Joao Pedro Stedile, leader of the Landless movement (MST),	said	the acquittal shamed the country
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 22]

[Joao Pedro Stedile,]	is	[the] leader of the Landless movement (MST)
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 23]

"The judge will have blood on his hands if more peasants are killed in Para,"	he	said
Verbiage	Sayer	Verbal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 24]

"He [the judge] has declared impunity for those who commit crimes in the countryside."	[he]	[said]
Verbiage	Sayer	Verbal
Theme	Rheme	

[11] After the verdict hundreds of MST supporters chanted "murderers, murderers", then charged through Belem throwing stones at police.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 25]

After the verdict	hundreds of MST supporters	chanted	"murderers, murderers"
Circumstance	Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 26]

[The MST supporters]	charged	through Belem throwing stones at police
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

Text #6

Officers 'guilty' of massacre go free

TOTALS

Total number of words in the text:	336 words
Total number of clauses analysed in the text:	26 clauses
Total number of occurrences of process types:	
Material:	06 Material Processes
Mental:	01 Mental Processes
Relational:	05 Relational Processes
Behavioural:	00 Behavioural Processes
Verbal:	14 Verbal Processes
Existential:	00 Existential Processes

The Guardian/The Observer

2000

Text #1

'Today the person who can't read is nothing'

[1] Girl who became a symbol of the rural poor is now being educated as part of a drive for wider land reform but

Alex Bellos in Rio de Janeiro

Monday January 31, 2000

[2] Her face defined a movement. Hair matted, eyes expressing terror and anguish - yet with a waif-like grace that seemed to symbolise the hopes of millions of dispossessed Brazilians in their struggle for land.

[3] Joceli Borges was the young girl who, when photographed in 1996 by Sebastiao Salgado and put on the cover of his book, *Terra*, brought the revolutionary actions of the Landless Movement (MST) to an international audience.

[4] She was five years old then and living a wretched existence under plastic sheeting by the side of a road. Now, approaching nine, her life has improved unimaginably.

[5] First, her family has gained rights to the disused farmland that they - together with 2,000 other families - stormed and occupied the day the picture was taken. She now lives modestly but happily and self-sufficiently with her parents, three sisters and brothers in a small brick house in the farm's vast grounds.

[6] Secondly, Joceli now goes to school. She is learning to read and write - an opportunity that as the child of migrant rural workers she would previously never have had.

[7] "For us, it's wonderful that she can study," says Joceli's mother Oracelha, 41. "Our children need to study so that they can defend themselves in the future. In this day and age, the person who can't read is nothing."

[8] "I really like school," adds Joceli, an intensely timid child with a wholesome smile. "I can now write my name."

[9] Through its radical policy of invading unproductive land and squatting until the government concedes rights, the MST has settled 250,000 families in the past 15 years. But while the movement's *raison d'être* (sic) is the fight for land reform, it has also made huge strides in educating the rural poor.

[10] "Agrarian reform is not just about land. Education is just as important. With one comes the other," says Elfi Fenske, of the MST's national directorate on education. "School is a minimum right for every citizen. Access to knowledge is vital for the people's development."

[11] The MST has set up 1,800 schools in its 2,600 settlements, attended by 110,000 pupils. Ireno Alves dos Santos, the 41,000-hectare farm where the Borges live, is Brazil's largest MST community and a model for the movement.

[12] In Ireno Alves, every child attends one of its 11 schools - well above the national average of 90%. It is a small triumph against adversity. The school buildings were built by pupils, teachers and parents with wooden planks and gumption.

[13] In the summer the classrooms are too hot to use. In the winter they are so cold that pupils have to make camp fires. When it rains the farm's dirt tracks are unpassable and only 10% of pupils turn up. Even on good days access is difficult: Joceli had to take a year out because her father would not let her make the hour-long trek through dense vegetation on her own. Now she gets a lift down the farm's single asphalt road.

[14] The Brazilian constitution dictates that local government must give every child access to school. But the MST has developed its own methodology distinct from the state's other schools.

[15] Ms Fenske says: "In state schools, the teaching is predetermined by the government. It doesn't take the environment into consideration. We want our communities to shape our schools. MST education is based on the pupils' lives."

[16] The schools are an integral part of the movement's philosophy of struggle. Pinned up on the classroom walls are copies of the MST's politicised manifesto for land reform. In murals on the wooden walls outside are images of marchers waving the movement's distinctive banner.

[17] A communitarian, anti-big business ideology pervades the teaching. Children are taught from an early age, for example, that farming practices that involve toxic chemicals are bad.

[18] "Schools outside the settlement prepare people for exams. Our proposal is that our pupils here will stay living in the rural community. We need to show them that their lives are part of Brazil's history. We also need to show them basic agricultural principles - like, if you just plant corn you won't survive," says Edson Anhaia, an Ireno Alves teacher.

[19] Fieldwork can include the direct-action techniques that the movement espouses. Once, when the local authority was stalling with money, 60 pupils, 10 parents and 12 teachers stormed the mayor's building and occupied it until their demands were met. Another time, 1,000 people linked arms around the building and sung the MST anthem.

[20] Teachers draw on the children's experiences. Pupils are encouraged to "rescue" their pasts by telling the stories of their difficult lives. Because of this technique, says teacher Marcos Gehrke, one of the settlement's schools was recently evaluated as being better at language than established urban schools.

[21] But serious problems remain. Of the 1,800 MST schools, only 100 cater for primary years five to eight. The rest cater just for the first four years, which is barely enough to teach a child to read and write fluently. Few settlements have access to secondary education. More than 40% of adults are illiterate.

[22] And the majority of people are still landless. More than 10m families are waiting to be given land - eight times more than those that have gained title rights. Brazil has one of the world's least equitable distributions of wealth.

[23] The primary education system in Brazil faces other problems. So many children have either to retake years or drop out that only a third reach the eighth and final obligatory year of primary in eight years. Teachers are paid an average of only £140 a month.

[24] But the MST schools have shown what can be done by the disenfranchised with few resources. If Joceli's wide-eyed gaze four years ago was a symbol of struggle, her smiling face is now a positive image of what the movement has achieved.

Text #1

'Today the person who can't read is nothing'

Monday January 31, 2000

[1] Girl who became a symbol of the rural poor is now being educated as part of a drive for wider land reform but

[Text 1 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 1]

Girl (...)	became	a symbol of the rural poor
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 2]

[The girl]	is now being educated	as part of a drive for wider land reform but
Goal	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[2] Her face defined a movement. Hair matted, eyes expressing terror and anguish - yet with a waif-like grace that seemed to symbolise the hopes of millions of dispossessed Brazilians in their struggle for land.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 3]

Her face	defined	a movement
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 4]

[Her] hair	[was]	matted
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 5]

[Her] eyes	[were] expressing	terror and anguish
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 6]

A waif-like grace (...)	seemed to symbolise	the hopes of millions of dispossessed Brazilians in their (...)
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[3] Joceli Borges was the young girl who, when photographed in 1996 by Sebastiao Salgado and put on the cover of his book, Terra, brought the revolutionary actions of the Landless Movement (MST) to an international audience.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 7]

Joceli Borges	was	the young girl
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 8]

[Joceli Borges]	[was] photographed	in 1996	by Sebastiao Salgado
Goal	Material	Circumstance	Actor
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 9]

[Joceli Borges]	[was] put	on the cover of his book, Terra
Goal	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 10]

[Joceli Borges] (...)	brought	the revolutionary actions of the Landless (...)	to an international audience
Actor	Material	Goal	Beneficiary
Theme	Rheme		

[4] She was five years old then and living a wretched existence under plastic sheeting by the side of a road. Now, approaching nine, her life has improved unimaginably.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 11]

She	was	five years old	then
Carrier	Relational	Attribute	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 12]

[She]	(...)	[was] living	a wretched existence	under plastic sheeting by the side of a road
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 13]

Now,	approaching nine,	her life	has improved	unimaginably
	Circumstance	Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme		Rheme		

[5] First, her family has gained rights to the disused farmland that they - together with 2,000 other families - stormed and occupied the day the picture was taken. She now lives modestly but happily and self-sufficiently with her parents, three sisters and brothers in a small brick house in the farm's vast grounds.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 14]

First,	her family	has gained	rights to the disused farmland
	Actor	Material	Goal
Theme		Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 15]

They - (...) -	stormed and occupied	[the disused land]	[on] the day the picture was taken
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme		Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 16]

She	lives	modestly but happily and self-sufficiently
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme		Rheme

[Text 1 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 16a]

[She]	[lives]	with her parents, three sisters and brothers
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme		Rheme

[Text 1 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 16b]

[She]	[lives]	in a small brick house in the farm's vast grounds
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[6] Secondly, Joceli now goes to school. She is learning to read and write - an opportunity that as the child of migrant rural workers she would previously never have had.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 17]

Secondly,	Joceli	goes	to school
	Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 18]

She	is learning to read and write
Actor	Material
Theme	Rheme

[Text 1 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 19]

An opportunity that as the child of migrant rural workers	she	would never have had
Attribute	Carrier	Relational
Theme	Rheme	

[7] "For us, it's wonderful that she can study," says Joceli's mother Oracelha, 41. "Our children need to study so that they can defend themselves in the future. In this day and age, the person who can't read is nothing."

[Text 1 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 20]

"For us, it's wonderful that she can study,"	says	Joceli's mother Oracelha, 41
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 20a]

"Our children need to study so that they can defend themselves in the future"	[Joceli's mother]	[says]
Verbiage	Sayer	Verbal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 20b]

"In this day and age, the person who can't read is nothing"	[Joceli's mother]	[says]
Verbiage	Sayer	Verbal
Theme	Rheme	

[8] "I really like school," adds Joceli, an intensely timid child with a wholesome smile. "I can now write my name."

[Text 1 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 21]

"I really like school,"	adds	Joceli
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 22]

[Joceli]	[is]	an intensely timid child with a wholesome smile
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 23]

[Joceli]	[adds]	"I can now write my name"
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[9] Through its radical policy of invading unproductive land and squatting until the government concedes rights, the MST has settled 250,000 families in the past 15 years. But while the movement's *raison d'être* (sic) is the fight for land reform, it has also made huge strides in educating the rural poor.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 24]

Through its radical policy of invading (...)	the MST	has settled	250,000 families	in the past 15 years
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 25]

But while	the movement's <i>raison d'être</i>	is	the fight for land reform
	Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 26]

It [the movement]	has also made	huge strides	in educating the rural poor
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[10] "Agrarian reform is not just about land. Education is just as important. With one comes the other," says Elfi Fenske, of the MST's national directorate on education. "School is a minimum right for every citizen. Access to knowledge is vital for the people's development."

[Text 1 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 27]

"Agrarian reform is not just about land. Education is just as important. With (...)"	says	Elfi Fenske
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 27a]

"School is a minimum right for every citizen."	[Elfi Fenske]	[says]
Verbiage	Sayer	Verbal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 27b]

"Access to knowledge is vital for the people's development."	[Elfi Fenske]	[says]
Verbiage	Sayer	Verbal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 28]

[Elfi Fenske]	[is]	[a member] of the MST's national directorate on education
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[11] The MST has set up 1,800 schools in its 2,600 settlements, attended by 110,000 pupils. Irno Alves dos Santos, the 41,000-hectare farm where the Borges live, is Brazil's largest MST community and a model for the movement.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 29]

The MST	has set up	1,800 schools	in its 2,600 settlements, attended by 110,000 pupils
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 30]

Ireno Alves dos Santos, (...)	is	Brazil's largest MST community
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 30a]

[Ireno Alves dos Santos]	[is]	a model for the movement
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 31]

[Ireno Alves dos Santos]	[is]	the 41,000-hectare farm where the Borges live
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[12] In Ireno Alves, every child attends one of its 11 schools - well above the national average of 90%. It is a small triumph against adversity. The school buildings were built by pupils, teachers and parents with wooden planks and gumption.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 32]

In Ireno Alves,	every child	attends	one of its 11 schools -	well above the national average of 90%
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 33]

It	is	a small triumph against adversity
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 34]

The school buildings	were built	by pupils, teachers and parents	with wooden planks and gumption
Goal	Material	Actor	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[13] In the summer the classrooms are too hot to use. In the winter they are so cold that pupils have to make camp fires. When it rains the farm's dirt tracks are unpassable and only 10% of pupils turn up. Even on good days access is difficult: Joceli had to take a year out because her father would not let her make the hour-long trek through dense vegetation on her own. Now she gets a lift down the farm's single asphalt road.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 35]

In the summer	the classrooms	are	too hot
Circumstance	Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 36]

In the winter	they	are	so cold
Circumstance	Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 37]

Pupils	have to make	camp fires
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 38]

When it rains	the farm's dirt tracks	are	unpassable
Circumstance	Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 39]

[When it rains]	only 10% of pupils	turn up
Circumstance	Actor	Material
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 40]

Even on good days	access	is	difficult
Circumstance	Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 41]

Joceli	had to take	a year	out
Actor	Material	Goal	Material
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 42]

Her father	would not let	her make the hour-long trek through dense (...)
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 43]

Now	she	gets	a lift	down the farm's single asphalt road
	Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[14] The Brazilian constitution dictates that local government must give every child access to school. But the MST has developed its own methodology distinct from the state's other schools.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 44]

The Brazilian constitution	dictates	that local government must give every child access to school
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 45]

But	the MST	has developed	its own methodology	distinct from the state's other schools
	Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[15] Ms Fenske says: "In state schools, the teaching is predetermined by the government. It doesn't take the environment into consideration. We want our communities to shape our schools. MST education is based on the pupils' lives."

[Text 1 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 46]

Ms Fenske	says:	"In state schools, the teaching is predetermined by the government."
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 46a]

[Ms Fenske]	[says:]	"It [the school system] doesn't take the environment into consideration."
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 46b]

[Ms Fenske]	[says:]	"We want our communities to shape our schools."
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 46c]

[Ms Fenske]	[says:]	"MST education is based on the pupils' lives."
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[16] The schools are an integral part of the movement's philosophy of struggle. Pinned up on the classroom walls are copies of the MST's politicised manifesto for land reform. In murals on the wooden walls outside are images of marchers waving the movement's distinctive banner.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 47]

The schools	are	an integral part of the movement's philosophy of struggle
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 48]

Pinned up	on the classroom walls	are	copies of the MST's politicised manifesto for land reform
Material	Circumstance	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 49]

In murals on the wooden walls outside	[there] are	images of marchers waving the movement's (...)
Circumstance	Existential	Existent
Theme	Rheme	

[17] A communitarian, anti-big business ideology pervades the teaching. Children are taught from an early age, for example, that farming practices that involve toxic chemicals are bad.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 17 - Clause 50]

A communitarian, anti-big business ideology	pervades	the teaching
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 1 - Paragraph 17 - Clause 51]

Children	are taught	from an early age (...)	that farming practices that involve toxic chemicals are bad
Beneficiary	Material	Circumstance	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[18] "Schools outside the settlement prepare people for exams. Our proposal is that our pupils here will stay living in the rural community. We need to show them that their lives are part of Brazil's history. We also need to show them basic agricultural principles - like, if you just plant corn you won't survive," says Edson Anhaia, an Ireno Alves teacher.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 18 - Clause 52]

"Schools outside the settlement prepare people for exams."			[says]	[Edson Anhaia]
Verbiage		Verbal	Sayer	
Theme		Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 18 - Clause 52a]

"Our proposal is that our pupils here will stay living in the rural community."			[says]	[Edson Anhaia]
Verbiage		Verbal	Sayer	
Theme		Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 18 - Clause 52b]

"We need to show them that their lives are part of Brazil's history."			[says]	[Edson Anhaia]
Verbiage		Verbal	Sayer	
Theme		Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 18 - Clause 52c]

"We also need to show them basic agricultural principles - like, if you (...)"			[says]	[Edson Anhaia]
Verbiage		Verbal	Sayer	
Theme		Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 18 - Clause 53]

[Edson Anhaia]	[is]	an Ireno Alves teacher		
Carrier	Relational	Attribute		
Theme	Rheme			

[19] Fieldwork can include the direct-action techniques that the movement espouses. Once, when the local authority was stalling with money, 60 pupils, 10 parents and 12 teachers stormed the mayor's building and occupied it until their demands were met. Another time, 1,000 people linked arms around the building and sung the MST anthem.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 19 - Clause 54]

Fieldwork	can include	the direct-action techniques that the movement espouses		
Identified	Relational	Identifier		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 19 - Clause 55]

Once, when	the local authority	was stalling	with money	
	Actor	Material	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 19 - Clause 56]

60 pupils, 10 parents and 12 teachers	stormed	the mayor's building		
Actor	Material	Goal		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 19 - Clause 57]

[60 pupils, 10 parents and 12 teachers]	occupied	it [the mayor's building]	until their demands were met	
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 19 - Clause 58]

Another time,	1,000 people	linked	arms	around the building
	Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 19 - Clause 59]

[The 1,000 people]	sung	the MST anthem		
Actor	Material	Range		
Theme	Rheme			

[20] Teachers draw on the children's experiences. Pupils are encouraged to "rescue" their pasts by telling the stories of their difficult lives. Because of this technique, says teacher Marcos Gehrke, one of the settlement's schools was recently evaluated as being better at language than established urban schools.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 20 - Clause 60]

Teachers	draw on	the children's experiences		
Actor	Material	Goal		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 20 - Clause 61]

Pupils	are encouraged to "rescue"	their pasts	by telling the stories of their difficult lives	
Goal	Material	Goal	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 20 - Clause 62]

Because of this technique,	says	teacher Marcos Gehrke,	one of the settlement's schools was (...)	
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer	Verbiage	
Theme	Rheme			

[21] But serious problems remain. Of the 1,800 MST schools, only 100 cater for primary years five to eight. The rest cater just for the first four years, which is barely enough to teach a child to read and write fluently. Few settlements have access to secondary education. More than 40% of adults are illiterate.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 21 - Clause 63]

But	serious problems	remain	[unsolved]	
	Carrier	Relational	Attribute	
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 21 - Clause 64]

Of the 1,800 MST schools, (...)	100	cater	for primary years five to eight	
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 21 - Clause 65]

The rest	cater	just for the first four years		
Actor	Material	Circumstance		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 21 - Clause 66]

[The schooling period]	is	barely enough	to teach a child to read and write fluently	
Carrier	Relational	Attribute	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 21 - Clause 67]

Few settlements	have	access to secondary education	
Carrier	Relational	Attribute	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 21 - Clause 68]

More than 40% of adults	are	illiterate	
Carrier	Relational	Attribute	
Theme	Rheme		

[22] And the majority of people are still landless. More than 10m families are waiting to be given land - eight times more than those that have gained title rights. Brazil has one of the world's least equitable distributions of wealth.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 22 - Clause 69]

And	the majority of people	are	still landless
Carrier	Relational	Attribute	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 22 - Clause 70]

More than 10m families	are waiting	to be given land	
Actor	Material	Goal	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 22 - Clause 71]

Eight times more than	those that	have gained	title rights
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 22 - Clause 72]

Brazil	has	one of the world's least equitable distributions of wealth	
Carrier	Relational	Attribute	
Theme	Rheme		

[23] The primary education system in Brazil faces other problems. So many children have either to retake years or drop out that only a third reach the eighth and final obligatory year of primary in eight years. Teachers are paid an average of only £140 a month.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 23 - Clause 73]

The primary education system in Brazil	faces	other problems	
Actor	Material	Goal	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 23 - Clause 74]

So many children	have (...) to retake	years	
Actor	Material	Goal	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 23 - Clause 75]

[So many children]	[have to]	drop out	
Actor	Material		
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 23 - Clause 76]

Only	a third	reach	the eighth and final obligatory year of primary in eight years	
	Actor	Material	Goal	
Theme		Rheme		

[Text 1 - Paragraph 23 - Clause 77]

Teachers	are paid	an average of only £140 a month		
Beneficiary	Material	Goal		
Theme		Rheme		

[24] But the MST schools have shown what can be done by the disenfranchised with few resources. If Joceli's wide-eyed gaze four years ago was a symbol of struggle, her smiling face is now a positive image of what the movement has achieved.

[Text 1 - Paragraph 24 - Clause 78]

But	the MST schools	have shown	what can be done	by the disenfranchised with few resources	
	Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance	
Theme		Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 24 - Clause 79]

If	Joceli's wide-eyed gaze	four years ago	was	a symbol of struggle	
	Carrier	Circumstance	Relational	Attribute	
Theme		Rheme			

[Text 1 - Paragraph 24 - Clause 80]

Her smiling face	is	a positive image of what the movement has achieved			
Identified	Relational	Identifier			
Theme		Rheme			

Text #1

'Today the person who can't read is nothing'

TOTALS

Total number of words in the text:	1011 words
Total number of clauses analysed in the text:	80 clauses
Total number of occurrences of process types:	
Material:	42 Material Processes
Mental:	00 Mental Processes
Relational:	29 Relational Processes
Behavioural:	00 Behavioural Processes
Verbal:	08 Verbal Processes
Existential:	01 Existential Processes

Text #2

Law star returns to defend squatter leader

[1] As Brazil plans its 500th anniversary celebrations, a land activist is back in court and millions of peasants are still without a patch to farm

Alex Bellos in Porto Seguro

Monday April 3, 2000

[2] Brazil's shaky criminal justice system comes under scrutiny today with the high-profile retrial of a landless leader accused of murdering a wealthy landowner and a military policeman.

[3] Jose Rainha was sentenced to 26 years in prison for the killings in 1997, despite evidence that he was hundreds of miles from the crime scene.

[4] The case has received attention from human rights groups which claim vested interests were trying criminalise the leadership of Latin America's largest popular movement.

[5] Rainha will be represented by Brazil's most famous barrister who, at 88, is returning to the courtroom 21 years after he retired. Evandro Lins e Silva said he was persuaded to take the case after appeals by the Portuguese writer Jose Saramago, who won the Nobel prize for literature in 1998.

[6] "This is an exceptional case in the history of Brazil. It is irrefutably political. The entire world is interested in the outcome," said Mr Lins e Silva.

[7] The case arises from the conflict between the Landless Movement (MST) and the landowners. A quarter of a million families have gained land by squatting in the past 16 years. Often landlords use violence to stop them, though the landless movement too has been accused of some killings.

[8] In June 1989 a group of about 100 MST families invaded a farm in Espirito Santo, a coastal province north of Rio de Janeiro. Three days later the landowner and a military policeman, both armed, went to the site. Both men were shot and several landless people were wounded.

[9] Rainha was one of the main activists in Espirito Santo. MST alleges that several attempts had already been made on his life and that before June 1989 he had been moved to another state.

Text #2

Law star returns to defend squatter leader

Monday April 3, 2000

[1] As Brazil plans its 500th anniversary celebrations, a land activist is back in court and millions of peasants are still without a patch to farm

[Text 2 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 1]

As	Brazil	plans	its 500th anniversary celebrations
	Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 2 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 2]

A land activist	is	back in court	
Carrier	Relational	Attribute	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 2 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 3]

Millions of peasants	are	without a patch to farm	
Carrier	Relational	Attribute	
Theme	Rheme		

[2] Brazil's shaky criminal justice system comes under scrutiny today with the high-profile retrial of a landless leader accused of murdering a wealthy landowner and a military policeman.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 4]

Brazil's shaky criminal justice system	comes under scrutiny	today with the high-profile retrial	
Actor	Material	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 2 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 5]

A landless leader	[is] accused	of murdering a wealthy landowner and a military policeman	
Target	Verbal	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme		

[3] Jose Rainha was sentenced to 26 years in prison for the killings in 1997, despite evidence that he was hundreds of miles from the crime scene.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 6]

Jose Rainha	was sentenced	to 26 years in prison for the killings in 1997	
Goal	Material	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 2 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 7]

Despite evidence that	he	was	hundreds of miles from the crime scene
	Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme		

[4] The case has received attention from human rights groups which claim vested interests were trying criminalise the leadership of Latin America's largest popular movement.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 8]

The case	has received	attention	from human rights groups
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 2 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 9]

[Human rights groups]	claim	vested interests were trying criminalise the leadership of Latin (...)	
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage	
Theme	Rheme		

[5] Rainha will be represented by Brazil's most famous barrister who, at 88, is returning to the courtroom 21 years after he retired. Evandro Lins e Silva said he was persuaded to take the case after appeals by the Portuguese writer Jose Saramago, who won the Nobel prize for literature in 1998.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 10]

Rainha	will be represented	by Brazil's most famous barrister	
Identified	Relational	Identifier	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 2 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 11]

[Brazil's most famous barrister]	[is]	at 88	
Carrier	Relational	Attribute	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 2 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 12]

[Brazil's most famous barrister]	is returning	to the courtroom 21 years after he retired	
Actor	Material	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 2 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 13]

Evandro Lins e Silva	said	he was persuaded to take the case after appeals by the Portuguese writer (...)	
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 2 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 14]

[The Portuguese writer Jose Saramago]	won	the Nobel prize for literature	in 1998
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[6] "This is an exceptional case in the history of Brazil. It is irrefutably political. The entire world is interested in the outcome," said Mr Lins e Silva.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 15]

"This is an exceptional case in the history of Brazil"	said	Mr Lins e Silva	
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 2 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 15a]

"It is irrefutably political"	[said]	[Mr Lins e Silva]	
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 2 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 15b]

"The entire world is interested in the outcome"	[said]	[Mr Lins e Silva]
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[7] The case arises from the conflict between the Landless Movement (MST) and the landowners. A quarter of a million families have gained land by squatting in the past 16 years. Often landlords use violence to stop them, though the landless movement too has been accused of some killings.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 16]

The case	arises	from the conflict between the Landless Movement (MST) and the landowners
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 17]

A quarter of a million families	have gained	land	by squatting in the past 16 years
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 2 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 18]

Often	landlords	use	violence	to stop them
	Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 2 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 19]

The landless movement	has been accused	of some killings
Goal	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[8] In June 1989 a group of about 100 MST families invaded a farm in Espírito Santo, a coastal province north of Rio de Janeiro. Three days later the landowner and a military policeman, both armed, went to the site. Both men were shot and several landless people were wounded.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 20]

In June 1989	a group of about 100 MST families	invaded	a farm	in Espírito Santo, a coastal (...)
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 2 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 21]

Three days later	the landowner and a military policeman, both armed,	went	to the site
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 2 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 22]

Both men	were shot
Goal	Material
Theme	Rheme

[Text 2 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 23]

Several landless people	were wounded
Goal	Material
Theme	Rheme

[9] Rainha was one of the main activists in Espirito Santo. MST alleges that several attempts had already been made on his life and that before June 1989 he had been moved to another state.

[Text 2 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 24]

Rainha	was	one of the main activists	in Espirito Santo
Identified	Relational	Identifier	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 2 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 25]

MST	alleges	that several attempts had already been made on his life
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 2 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 25a]

Before June 1989 he had been moved to another state	[MST]	[alleges]
Verbiage	Sayer	Verbal
Theme	Rheme	

Text #2

Law star returns to defend squatter leader

TOTALS

Total number of words in the text: 327 words

Total number of clauses analysed in the text: 25 clauses

Total number of occurrences of process types:

Material: 14 Material Processes

Mental: 00 Mental Processes

Relational: 06 Relational Processes

Behavioural: 00 Behavioural Processes

Verbal: 05 Verbal Processes

Existential: 00 Existential Processes

Text #3

Landless movement tries for a remake

Alex Bellos

Monday April 3, 2000

[1] When Dan Baron Cohen arrived in Brazil two years ago, he read a magazine article about the country's mass movement of dispossessed rural workers. "It was my first knowledge about them," he says. "And I immediately wanted to know more."

[2] Little did the Welsh drama lecturer realise that soon afterwards he would be swept up by the landless cause. Mr Baron Cohen is now leading one of the main cultural projects of the Landless Movement (MST), a radical organisation representing several million poor Brazilians that fights for social justice in a country with huge extremes in the distribution of wealth.

[3] Mr Baron Cohen's official role is to coordinate the building of six monuments to act as a counterpoint to the official celebrations of Brazil's 500th birthday this year. Under the banner "The Other 500 years", the monuments are meant to show the resistance history of the Indian, black and poor communities since the arrival of the former Portuguese colonialists in South America.

[4] But while the sculptures will be Mr Baron Cohen's most visible contribution to the organisation, his involvement also represents an MST attempt to change its culture. It wants a more human face than the one conveyed by the hatchet-waving Marxists who have run some of its takeovers of little-used land.

[5] Since it emerged 16 years ago the MST has revolutionised land reform in Brazil by organising mass squats on unproductive farms and refusing to leave until the government awarded the squatters title.

[6] Using this technique - which often resulted in violent conflict with landowners - the MST says it has settled 250,000 families on reclaimed land. It became an international cause celebre and the largest social movement in Latin America.

[7] Inevitably, however, as the landless have become landowners their needs and priorities have changed. Despite the estimated 4.8m families still without land, the movement risks losing its constituency unless it acquires new values.

[8] Irma Brunetto, a national coordinator, says: "We need to show that we are not just fighters for land, but also that we are human beings. We need to change our way of being, our way of producing, our way of organising. We have to change all our practices."

[9] Mr Baron Cohen, a specialist in community theatre who worked with Sinn Fein in Ireland, says: "The legacy of repression and poverty has meant that the landless only have a vocabulary of resistance and struggle. The MST can motivate people to occupy land. Now they are facing the difficulties of creating a new society. Without a cultural revolution the movement will die."

[10] Mr Baron Cohen's work is seen as part of this "cultural revolution". Last year he organised a piece of MST art - a huge sculpture of 19 burned-out trees on a site where 19 landless peasants were murdered. The sculpture was built by 500 members of the victims' community.

[11] After this Mr Baron Cohen, 42, became closer to the MST and was asked not only to coordinate the six monuments for the alternative anniversary of Brazil but also to train 500 "cultural activists". The first monument is being built on the land where the Portuguese first came ashore, near Porto Seguro, opposite a huge iron cross that is the government's official monument for the 500-year celebrations.

[12] "The cross has offended the local Pataxo Indians, who own the land, because they were not consulted," says Mr Baron Cohen.

[13] Between 1988 and 1994 Mr Baron Cohen - who is the cousin of Sasha Baron Cohen, the comedian known as Ali G - cofounded and coordinated a community theatre and mural group in the Irish republican community in Londonderry.

[14] After the IRA ceasefire he took up a post as a senior lecturer in theatre at Glamorgan University. He moved to Brazil in 1998 as a professor of drama at the University of Santa Catarina in Florianopolis in southern Brazil where he became involved in creating a play with the MST.

[15] He says that once he decided he wanted to work full-time with the movement, he embarked on an itinerant life that involved about 80 full days last year in cramped Brazilian buses moving between communities. He slept as often under plastic sheeting in makeshift shanties as he did in a proper bed. He is unpaid, and seems to have become something of a disciple of the MST, as well as a cultural activist.

[16] He says: "My motivation of being here is to learn from the movement - I believe they have proposals that we could adapt for post-industrial Europe. I have not encountered any movement in the world that has the same vision of community-based development and participatory democracy as the MST."

Text #3

Landless movement tries for a remake

Monday April 3, 2000

[1] When Dan Baron Cohen arrived in Brazil two years ago, he read a magazine article about the country's mass movement of dispossessed rural workers. "It was my first knowledge about them," he says. "And I immediately wanted to know more."

[Text 3 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 1]

When	Dan Baron Cohen	arrived	in Brazil two years ago
	Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 2]

He	read	a magazine article	about the country's mass movement of dispossessed rural workers
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 3]

"It was my first knowledge about them,"	he	says
Verbiage	Sayer	Verbal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 3a]

"And I immediately wanted to know more."	[he]	[says]
Verbiage	Sayer	Verbal
Theme	Rheme	

[2] Little did the Welsh drama lecturer realise that soon afterwards he would be swept up by the landless cause. Mr Baron Cohen is now leading one of the main cultural projects of the Landless Movement (MST), a radical organisation representing several million poor Brazilians that fights for social justice in a country with huge extremes in the distribution of wealth.

[Text 3 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 4]

[Baron Cohen]	[is]	[a] Welsh drama lecturer
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 5]

Little	did	[Cohen]	realise	that soon he would be swept up by the landless cause
Circumstance	Mental	Senser	Mental	Phenomenon
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 3 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 6]

Mr Baron Cohen	is leading	one of the main cultural projects of the Landless Movement (MST)
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 7]

[MST]	[is]	a radical organisation representing several million poor Brazilians
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 8]

[MST]	fighters	for social justice	in a country with huge extremes in the distribution of wealth
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[3] Mr Baron Cohen's official role is to coordinate the building of six monuments to act as a counterpoint to the official celebrations of Brazil's 500th birthday this year. Under the banner "The Other 500 years", the monuments are meant to show the resistance history of the Indian, black and poor communities since the arrival of the former Portuguese colonialists in South America.

[Text 3 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 9]

Mr Baron Cohen's official role	is	to coordinate the building of six monuments
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 10]

[The six monuments]	[are] to act as	a counterpoint to the official celebrations of the Brazil's 500th (...)
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 11]

Under the banner "The Other 500 years",	the monuments	are meant	to show the resistance history (...)
Circumstance	Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme		

[4] But while the sculptures will be Mr Baron Cohen's most visible contribution to the organisation, his involvement also represents an MST attempt to change its culture. It wants a more human face than the one conveyed by the hatchet-waving Marxists who have run some of its takeovers of little-used land.

[Text 3 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 12]

But while	the sculptures	will be	Mr Baron Cohen's most visible contribution to the organisation
	Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 13]

His involvement	represents	an MST attempt to change its culture
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 14]

It [MST]	wants	a more human face	than the one conveyed by the hatchet-waving Marxists
Senser	Mental	Phenomenon	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 15]

The hatchet-waving Marxists	have run	some of its takeovers of little-used land
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[5] Since it emerged 16 years ago the MST has revolutionised land reform in Brazil by organising mass squats on unproductive farms and refusing to leave until the government awarded the squatters title.

[Text 3 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 16]

Since	it	emerged	16 years ago
	Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 17]

The MST	has revolutionised	land reform	in Brazil
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 18]

[The MST]	[organises]	mass squats	on unproductive farms
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 19]

[The MST]	[refuses to leave]	[the farms]	until the government awarded the squatters title
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[6] Using this technique - which often resulted in violent conflict with landowners - the MST says it has settled 250,000 families on reclaimed land. It became an international cause celebre and the largest social movement in Latin America.

[Text 3 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 20]

Using this technique	the MST	says	it has settled 250,000 families on reclaimed land
Circumstance	Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 21]

[Using this technique]	resulted	in violent conflict with landowners
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 22]

It [MST]	became	an international cause celebre
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 22a]

It [MST]	[became]	the largest social movement in Latin America
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[7] Inevitably, however, as the landless have become landowners their needs and priorities have changed. Despite the estimated 4.8m families still without land, the movement risks losing its constituency unless it acquires new values.

[Text 3 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 23]

Inevitably, however, as	the landless	have become	landowners
	Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 24]

Their needs and priorities	have changed
Actor	Material
Theme	Rheme

[Text 3 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 25]

Despite the estimated 4.8m (...)	the movement	risks losing	its constituency	unless it acquires (...)
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 3 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 26]

Unless	it	acquires	new values
	Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[8] Irma Brunetto, a national coordinator, says: "We need to show that we are not just fighters for land, but also that we are human beings. We need to change our way of being, our way of producing, our way of organising. We have to change all our practices."

[Text 3 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 27]

[Irma Brunetto]	[is]	a national coordinator
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 28]

Irma Brunetto	says:	"We need to show that we are not just fighters for land, but also that (...)"
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 28a]

[Irma Brunetto]	[says:]	"We are human beings."
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 28b]

[Irma Brunetto]	[says:]	"We need to change our way of being, our way of producing, our way of (...)"
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 28c]

[Irma Brunetto]	[says:]	"We have to change all our practices."
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[9] Mr Baron Cohen, a specialist in community theatre who worked with Sinn Fein in Ireland, says: "The legacy of repression and poverty has meant that the landless only have a vocabulary of resistance and struggle. The MST can motivate people to occupy land. Now they are facing the difficulties of creating a new society. Without a cultural revolution the movement will die."

[Text 3 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 29]

[Mr Baron Cohen]	[is]	a specialist in community theatre
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 30]

[Mr Baron Cohen]	worked	with Sinn Fein in Ireland
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 31]

Mr Baron Cohen	says:	"The legacy of repression and poverty has meant that the landless only have (...)"
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 31a]

[Mr Baron Cohen]	[says:]	"The MST can motivate people to occupy land."
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 31b]

[Mr Baron Cohen]	[says:]	"Now they are facing the difficulties of creating a new society."
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 31c]

[Mr Baron Cohen]	[says:]	"Without a cultural revolution the movement will die."
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[10] Mr Baron Cohen's work is seen as part of this "cultural revolution". Last year he organised a piece of MST art - a huge sculpture of 19 burned-out trees on a site where 19 landless peasants were murdered. The sculpture was built by 500 members of the victims' community.

[Text 3 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 32]

Mr Baron Cohen's work	is seen	as part of this "cultural revolution"
Phenomenon	Mental	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 33]

Last year	he	organised	a piece of MST art
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 34]

[The piece of MST art]	[is]	a huge sculpture (...)	on a site where 19 landless peasants were murdered
Identified	Relational	Identifier	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 35]

The sculpture	was built	by 500 members of the victims' community
Goal	Material	Actor
Theme	Rheme	

[11] After this Mr Baron Cohen, 42, became closer to the MST and was asked not only to coordinate the six monuments for the alternative anniversary of Brazil but also to train 500 "cultural activists". The first monument is being built on the land where the Portuguese first came ashore, near Porto Seguro, opposite a huge iron cross that is the government's official monument for the 500-year celebrations.

[Text 3 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 36]

After this	Mr Baron Cohen	became	closer to the MST
	Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 37]

[Mr Baron Cohen]	[is]	42
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 38]

[Mr Baron Cohen]	was asked	not only to coordinate the six monuments for the alternative (...)
Receiver	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 38a]

[Mr Baron Cohen]	[was asked]	to train 500 "cultural activists"
Receiver	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 39]

The first monument	is being built	on the land where the Portuguese first came ashore, near Porto (...)
Goal	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 39a]

[The first monument]	[is being built]	opposite a huge iron cross that is the government's official (...)
Goal	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[12] "The cross has offended the local Pataxo Indians, who own the land, because they were not consulted," says Mr Baron Cohen.

[Text 3 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 40]

"The cross has offended the local Pataxo Indians, who own the land, (...)"	says	Mr Baron Cohen
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[13] Between 1988 and 1994 Mr Baron Cohen - who is the cousin of Sasha Baron Cohen, the comedian known as Ali G - cofounded and coordinated a community theatre and mural group in the Irish republican community in Londonderry.

[Text 3 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 41]

Between 1988 and 1994	Mr Baron Cohen	cofounded	a community theatre and mural group (...)
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 42]

[Between 1988 and 1994]	[Mr Baron Cohen]	coordinated	a community theatre and mural group (...)
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 3 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 43]

[Mr Baron Cohen]	is	the cousin of Sasha Baron Cohen, the comedian known as Ali G	
Identified	Relational	Identifier	
Theme	Rheme		

[14] After the IRA ceasefire he took up a post as a senior lecturer in theatre at Glamorgan University. He moved to Brazil in 1998 as a professor of drama at the University of Santa Catarina in Florianopolis in southern Brazil where he became involved in creating a play with the MST.

[Text 3 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 44]

After the IRA ceasefire	he	took up	a post	as a senior lecturer in theatre at Glamorgan (...)
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 3 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 45]

He	moved	to Brazil in 1998 as a professor of drama at the University of Santa Catarina in (...)		
Actor	Material	Circumstance		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 3 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 46]

He	became involved	in creating a play with the MST		
Actor	Material	Goal		
Theme	Rheme			

[15] He says that once he decided he wanted to work full-time with the movement, he embarked on an itinerant life that involved about 80 full days last year in cramped Brazilian buses moving between communities. He slept as often under plastic sheeting in makeshift shanties as he did in a proper bed. He is unpaid, and seems to have become something of a disciple of the MST, as well as a cultural activist.

[Text 3 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 47]

He	says	that once he decided he wanted to work full-time with the movement		
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 3 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 48]

He	embarked	on an itinerant life that involved about 80 full days last year in cramped Brazilian (...)		
Actor	Material	Circumstance		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 3 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 49]

He	slept	as often under plastic sheeting in makeshift shanties as he did in a proper bed		
Behavior	Behavioural	Circumstance		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 3 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 50]

He	is	unpaid		
Carrier	Relational	Attribute		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 3 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 51]

He	seems to have become	something of a disciple of the MST		
Carrier	Relational	Attribute		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 3 - Paragraph 15 - Clause 51a]

[He]	[seems to have become]	a cultural activist
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[16] He says: "My motivation of being here is to learn from the movement - I believe they have proposals that we could adapt for post-industrial Europe. I have not encountered any movement in the world that has the same vision of community-based development and participatory democracy as the MST."

[Text 3 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 52]

He	says:	"My motivation of being here is to learn from the movement - I believe they have (...)"
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 3 - Paragraph 16 - Clause 53]

[He]	[says:]	"I have not encountered any movement in the world that has the same vision of (...)"
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

Text #3

Landless movement tries for a remake

TOTALS

Total number of words in the text:	787 words
Total number of clauses analysed in the text:	53 clauses
Total number of occurrences of process types:	
Material:	23 Material Processes
Mental:	03 Mental Processes
Relational:	17 Relational Processes
Behavioural:	01 Behavioural Processes
Verbal:	09 Verbal Processes
Existential:	00 Existential Processes

Text #4

Friday April 7, 2000

Victory for landless movement

[1] A prominent leader of Brazil's landless peasants has been acquitted of murder in a judgment hailed as victory for the international human rights community.

[2] A seven-member jury overturned Jose Rainha's 1997 conviction for killing a police officer and a landowner in a dispute over land, making it the first high profile victory in a criminal court for the Marxist-based Landless Rural Workers Movement.

[3] "This shows that Brazil is increasingly less in the hands of the big landowners and that more and more justice is being made," said Brazil's agrarian reform minister, Raul Jungman.

[4] Brazil's international reputation as a country emerging from authoritarian rule has been tarnished by its slowness in solving conflicts over land. The richest 20% of the people hold 90% of the land, while the poorest 40% own just 1% - the unfairness ratio in the world.

[5] More than 1,000 people have died in the last 10 years in land disputes and yet landowners and their armed supporters go largely unpunished. Last year the case against 150 policemen accused of shooting 19 peasants collapsed despite TV footage of the massacre.

[6] Human rights organisations believe that Mr Rainha's original conviction was politically motivated to try to criminalise the Landless Movement, a direct action organisation which has gained title to land by organising mass squats.

[7] Supporters erupted in cheers as the verdict was read and carried Mr Rainha, 39, on their shoulders to a nearby square, where thousands had camped to watch the proceedings on a giant screen television.

[8] "The truth is like divine justice," Mr Rainha said after the verdict. "It may take a while to arrive, but it always emerges." Alex Bellos, Rio de Janeiro

Text #4

Friday April 7, 2000

Victory for landless movement

[1] A prominent leader of Brazil's landless peasants has been acquitted of murder in a judgment hailed as victory for the international human rights community.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 1]

A prominent leader of Brazil's landless peasants				has been acquitted		of murder		in a judgment (...)	
Target			Verbal		Verbiage		Circumstance		
Theme				Rheme					

[2] A seven-member jury overturned Jose Rainha's 1997 conviction for killing a police officer and a landowner in a dispute over land, making it the first high profile victory in a criminal court for the Marxist-based Landless Rural Workers Movement.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 2]

A seven-member jury		overturned		Jose Rainha's 1997 conviction		for killing a police officer and a (...)			
Actor		Material		Goal		Circumstance			
Theme		Rheme							

[Text 4 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 3]

[It]		[is]		the first high profile victory		in a criminal court for the Marxist-based (...)			
Identified		Relational		Identifier		Circumstance			
Theme		Rheme							

[3] "This shows that Brazil is increasingly less in the hands of the big landowners and that more and more justice is being made," said Brazil's agrarian reform minister, Raul Jungman.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 4]

"This shows that Brazil is increasingly less in the hands of the (...)"				said		Brazil's agrarian reform (...)			
Verbiage					Verbal		Sayer		
Theme					Rheme				

[Text 4 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 4a]

"This shows (...) that more and more justice is being made,"				said		Brazil's agrarian reform (...)			
Verbiage					Verbal		Sayer		
Theme					Rheme				

[4] Brazil's international reputation as a country emerging from authoritarian rule has been tarnished by its slowness in solving conflicts over land. The richest 20% of the people hold 90% of the land, while the poorest 40% own just 1% - the unfair ratio in the world.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 5]

Brazil's international reputation as (...)		has been tarnished		by its slowness		in solving conflicts over (...)			
Goal		Material		Actor		Circumstance			
Theme		Rheme							

[Text 4 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 6]

The richest 20% of the people	hold	90% of the land, while (...)
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 7]

The poorest 40%	own	1%
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 8]

[This]	[is]	the unfairness ratio in the world
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[5] More than 1,000 people have died in the last 10 years in land disputes and yet landowners and their armed supporters go largely unpunished. Last year the case against 150 policemen accused of shooting 19 peasants collapsed despite TV footage of the massacre.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 9]

More than 1,000 people	have died	in the last 10 years in land disputes
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 10]

Landowners and their armed supporters	go	unpunished
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 11]

Last year	the case against 150 policemen (...)	collapsed	despite TV footage of the massacre
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[6] Human rights organisations believe that Mr Rainha's original conviction was politically motivated to try to criminalise the Landless Movement, a direct action organisation which has gained title to land by organising mass squats.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 12]

Human rights organisations	believe	that Mr Rainha's original conviction was politically motivated
Sensor	Mental	Phenomenon
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 13]

To try to criminalise	the Landless Movement
Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme

[Text 4 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 14]

[The Landless Movement]	[is]	a direct action organisation
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 4 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 15]

[The Landless Movement]	has gained	title to land	by organizing mass squats
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[7] Supporters erupted in cheers as the verdict was read and carried Mr Rainha, 39, on their shoulders to a nearby square, where thousands had camped to watch the proceedings on a giant screen television.

[Text 4 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 16]

Supporters	erupted	in cheers as the verdict was read	
Actor	Material	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 4 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 17]

[Supporters]	carried	Mr Rainha,	on their shoulders to a nearby square
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 4 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 18]

[Mr Rainha]	[is]	39	
Carrier	Relational	Attribute	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 4 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 19]

Thousands	had camped	to watch the proceedings	on a giant screen television.
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[8] "The truth is like divine justice," Mr Rainha said after the verdict. "It may take a while to arrive, but it always emerges." Alex Bellos, Rio de Janeiro

[Text 4 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 20]

"The truth is like divine justice,"	Mr Rainha	said	after the verdict
Verbiage	Sayer	Verbal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 4 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 21]

[Mr Rainha]	[said]	"It may take a while to arrive, but it always emerges."	
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage	
Theme	Rheme		

Text #4

Victory for landless movement

TOTALS

Total number of words in the text: 287 words

Total number of clauses analysed in the text: 21 clauses

Total number of occurrences of process types:

Material: 09 Material Processes

Mental: 01 Mental Processes

Relational: 07 Relational Processes

Behavioural: 00 Behavioural Processes

Verbal: 04 Verbal Processes

Existential: 00 Existential Processes

Text #5

Brazil's landless to spoil big day

Alex Bellos in Rio de Janeiro

Friday April 21, 2000

[1] Tens of thousands of Brazil's rural workers will be hoping to obstruct the country's 500th anniversary celebrations tomorrow to culminate a week in which they stepped up an aggressive programme of land invasions.

[2] More than 100 private farms have been invaded since Monday by peasant families who are protesting against the unfair distribution of land in Latin America's largest country, the Landless Movement of Rural Workers (MST) said.

[3] The MST had planned to invade 500 properties by the week's end, saying that the number symbolically represents five centuries of rural exploitation. "We are doing this as a counterpoint to the official celebrations," said a spokesman, Nilton Viana. "We want to show that Brazil is not just the beautiful country portrayed by the elite, but has serious social problems."

[4] Brazil's long-planned commemoration of the day in 1500 when the Portuguese navigator Pedro Alvares Cabral first spotted the Brazilian coastline is threatening to turn into a public relations disaster, as it has focussed the protests of the country's down-trodden minorities, who say that there is little to celebrate.

[5] This week's invasions were largely by the 74,000 families who were living under plastic sheeting in roadside camps, Mr Viana said.

[6] Brazil's president, Fernando Henrique Cardoso, is taking extra precautions to ensure that the expected 40,000-strong protest, consisting mainly of landless Brazilians, does not end in pitched battles with the police. "The 500th birthday party is not an invitation to a wake," he said.

[7] The president's fears are not unfounded. Four years ago police killed 19 landless protesters in a case which attracted widespread international condemnation.

[8] In the 16 years since its formation, the MST has successfully gained land for 250,000 families by squatting on land and refusing to leave until title is granted.

[9] While the ministry for agrarian development puts the number of invasions at a third of the MST's claims, both sides agree that Brazil's land distribution - one of the most unfair in the world - is in need of reform. The richest 20% of the people hold 90% of the land, while the poorest 40% own 1%.

[10] "We need to intensify our actions to speed up the pace of reform," said Mr Viana. As well as the farm occupations, members of the MST this week invaded regional head offices of the government's land reform institutes and took employees hostage.

Text #5

Brazil's landless to spoil big day

Friday April 21, 2000

[1] Tens of thousands of Brazil's rural workers will be hoping to obstruct the country's 500th anniversary celebrations tomorrow to culminate a week in which they stepped up an aggressive programme of land invasions.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 1]

Tens of thousands of Brazil's rural workers			will be hoping	to obstruct the country's 500th anniversary (...)	
Senser		Mental		Phenomenon	
Theme		Rheme			

[Text 5 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 2]

Tens of thousands of Brazil's rural workers		[will] obstruct	the country's 500th anniversary celebrations (...)		
Actor		Material		Goal	
Theme		Rheme			

[Text 5 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 3]

Tens of thousands of Brazil's rural workers		stepped up	an aggressive programme of land invasions		
Actor		Material		Goal	
Theme		Rheme			

[2] More than 100 private farms have been invaded since Monday by peasant families who are protesting against the unfair distribution of land in Latin America's largest country, the Landless Movement of Rural Workers (MST) said.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 4]

More than 100 private farms		have been invaded	since Monday	by peasant families	
Goal		Material		Circumstance Actor	
Theme		Rheme			

[Text 5 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 5]

Peasant families		are protesting	against the unfair distribution of land	in Latin America's largest (...)	
Actor		Material		Goal Circumstance	
Theme		Rheme			

[Text 5 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 6]

More than 100 private farms have been (...) in Latin America's largest country,			the (...) (MST)	said	
Verbiage			Sayer		Verbal
Theme			Rheme		

[3] The MST had planned to invade 500 properties by the week's end, saying that the number symbolically represents five centuries of rural exploitation. "We are doing this as a counterpoint to the official celebrations," said a spokesman, Nilton Viana. "We want to show that Brazil is not just the beautiful country portrayed by the elite, but has serious social problems."

[Text 5 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 7]

The MST		had planned to invade	500 properties	by the week's end	
Actor		Material		Goal Circumstance	
Theme		Rheme			

[Text 5 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 8]

[The MST]	[says]	that the number symbolically represents five centuries of rural exploitation
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 9]

"We are doing this as a counterpoint to the official celebrations,"	said	a spokesman, Nilton Viana
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 9a]

[Nilton Viana]	[said]	"We want to show that Brazil is not just the beautiful country portrayed by (...)"
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 9b]

[Nilton Viana]	[said]	"We want to show that Brazil (...) has serious social problems"
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[4] Brazil's long-planned commemoration of the day in 1500 when the Portuguese navigator Pedro Alvares Cabral first spotted the Brazilian coastline is threatening to turn into a public relations disaster, as it has focussed the protests of the country's down-trodden minorities, who say that there is little to celebrate.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 10]

Brazil's long-planned commemoration of the day in (...)	is threatening	to turn into a public relations disaster
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 11]

The Portuguese navigator Pedro Alvares Cabral	spotted	the Brazilian coastline
Senser	Mental	Phenomenon
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 12]

It	has focussed	the protests of the country's down-trodden minorities
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 13]

[The country's down-trodden minorities]	[say]	that there is little to celebrate
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme	

[5] This week's invasions were largely by the 74,000 families who were living under plastic sheeting in roadside camps, Mr Viana said.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 14]

This week's invasions were largely by the 74,000 families who were living under (...)	Mr Viana	said.
Verbiage	Sayer	Verbal
Theme	Rheme	

[6] Brazil's president, Fernando Henrique Cardoso, is taking extra precautions to ensure that the expected 40,000-strong protest, consisting mainly of landless Brazilians, does not end in pitched battles with the police. "The 500th birthday party is not an invitation to a wake," he said.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 15]

Brazil's president, Fernando Henrique Cardoso	is taking	extra precautions
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 16]

[The extra precautions]	aim to ensure	that the expected 40,000-strong protest, (...)
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 17]

[The protest]	does not end	in pitched battles with the police
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 18]

[The expected 40,000-strong protest]	[consists of]	landless Brazilians
Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 19]

"The 500th birthday party is not an invitation to a wake,"	he	said
Verbiage	Sayer	Verbal
Theme	Rheme	

[7] The president's fears are not unfounded. Four years ago police killed 19 landless protesters in a case which attracted widespread international condemnation.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 20]

The president's fears	are not	unfounded
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 5 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 21]

Four years ago	police	killed	19 landless protesters	in a case
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 5 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 22]

[The case]	attracted	widespread international condemnation.
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[8] In the 16 years since its formation, the MST has successfully gained land for 250,000 families by squatting on land and refusing to leave until title is granted.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 23]

In the 16 years since its formation,	the MST	has successfully gained	land	for 250,000 families
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 5 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 24]

[The MST]	[has gained]	[land]	by squatting on land and refusing to leave until title is granted	
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme			

[9] While the ministry for agrarian development puts the number of invasions at a third of the MST's claims, both sides agree that Brazil's land distribution - one of the most unfair in the world - is in need of reform. The richest 20% of the people hold 90% of the land, while the poorest 40% own 1%.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 25]

While	the ministry for agrarian development	puts	the number of invasions	at a third of the (...)
	Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 5 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 26]

Both sides	agree	that Brazil's land distribution (...) is in need of reform		
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 5 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 27]

[Brazil's land distribution]	[is]	one of the most unfair in the world		
Carrier	Relational	Attribute		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 5 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 28]

The richest 20% of the people	hold	90% of the land		
Identified	Relational	Identifier		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 5 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 29]

The poorest 40%	own	1%		
Identified	Relational	Identifier		
Theme	Rheme			

[10] "We need to intensify our actions to speed up the pace of reform," said Mr Viana. As well as the farm occupations, members of the MST this week invaded regional head offices of the government's land reform institutes and took employees hostage.

[Text 5 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 30]

"We need to intensify our actions to speed up the pace of reform,"	said	Mr Viana		
Verbiage	Verbal	Sayer		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 5 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 31]

As well as the farm occupations,	members of the MST	this week	invaded	regional head (...)
Circumstance	Actor	Circumstance	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 5 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 32]

[Members of the MST]	took	employees	hostage	
Actor	Material	Goal	Material	
Theme	Rheme			

Text #5

Brazil's landless to spoil big day

TOTALS

Total number of words in the text: 405 words

Total number of clauses analysed in the text: 32 clauses

Total number of occurrences of process types:

Material: 16 Material Processes

Mental: 02 Mental Processes

Relational: 05 Relational Processes

Behavioural: 00 Behavioural Processes

Verbal: 09 Verbal Processes

Existential: 00 Existential Processes

Text #6

Stakes rise in Brazil's land battle

Alex Bellos, South America correspondent

Tuesday May 9, 2000

[1] Brazil faces increasingly violent clashes involving the rural landless after a week in which one person died and hundreds were injured during nationwide protests demanding faster land reform.

[2] The invasion last week of property in 22 of Brazil's 26 states by members of the Landless Workers Movement (MST) was one of the largest mobilisations in the group's history and showed that it was broadening its range of targets.

[3] More than 30,000 MST protesters invaded land and federal buildings including offices belonging to the country's central bank, finance ministry and agrarian reform ministry. In some areas, heavily armed police used smoke grenades and rubber bullets to quell the demonstrations. One 30-year-old man died near the southern city of Curitiba after being shot in the stomach.

[4] The scale of the MST protests - which spanned the country from the Amazon to Rio de Janeiro - stunned President Fernando Henrique Cardoso, who issued a flurry of measures including the creation of a special police force charged with dispersing illegal settlers from land and public buildings. He also said that if peasants squat on land, their efforts to gain land titles will be delayed by at least two years.

[5] The measures struck at the heart of the MST's long-held strategy of winning land disbursements by ordering squatters on to the vast swaths of arable, unused plots across Brazil. Through the success of this strategy the MST became one of South America's most important social movements, helping to redress the balance of land distribution in the continent's largest country, where half of the land is owned by a handful of wealthy families.

[6] But political analysts fear that Mr Cardoso's tough new measures may force the MST to become illegitimate, fuelling the radicalisation of a group that relies increasingly on confrontation with the government.

[7] "The government may have backed them into a blind alley," said David Fleischer, professor of politics at the University of Brasilia. "It's possible that the radicals will persuade them to become even more radical. If they do, Brazil is going to have a lot more problems."

[8] Jaime Callegari, one of the MST's national coordinators, echoed the sentiments. "The Brazilian countryside is a powder keg right now. The conflict is going to be tougher than ever in the coming months and it is only a matter of time before there is more violence."

[9] As the MST steps up its actions hardline farmers have said that their patience is running out with peasants invading their land, with some saying that they will use guns to deter the squatters.

[10] In what may turn out to be the first of many clashes, eight landless peasants in the state of Sergipe were injured last week when armed men drove them off property.

[11] Since Mr Cardoso took power in 1994, his administration has given land titles to more than 250,000 families, more than were granted by his predecessors in the previous 30 years. But the MST says he is distributing too little, too slowly and then refusing to give financial help to make the land productive.

[12] The activists who stormed into buildings and farms last week aimed to put pressure on the finance minister, Pedro Malan, to release more money for small farmers. Members of the movement said they would not leave the federal buildings without securing a meeting with Mr Cardoso or Mr Malan, but they climbed down and left the properties after the president threatened to send in troops to evict them.

[13] The protests have come at a price. The broad support enjoyed by the MST has eroded recently as an increasing number of people - particularly former sympathisers among the middle classes - perceive the movement as becoming more political, more radical and more violent.

[14] The violence has also provoked opposition from traditional allies on the left who question the movement's drastic actions when land reform is moving at a faster pace than ever before.

Text #6

Stakes rise in Brazil's land battle

Alex Bellos, South America correspondent

Tuesday May 9, 2000

[1] Brazil faces increasingly violent clashes involving the rural landless after a week in which one person died and hundreds were injured during nationwide protests demanding faster land reform.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 1]

Brazil	faces	violent clashes
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 2]

[The violent clashes]	[involve]	the rural landless
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 3]

One person	died	[in the violent clashes]
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 1 - Clause 4]

Hundreds	were injured	during nationwide protests demanding faster land reform
Goal	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[2] The invasion last week of property in 22 of Brazil's 26 states by members of the Landless Workers Movement (MST) was one of the largest mobilisations in the group's history and showed that it was broadening its range of targets.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 5]

The invasion last week	was	one of the largest mobilisations in the group's history
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 6]

[Properties] in 22 of Brazil's 26 states	[were invaded]	by members of the Landless Workers Movement (MST)
Goal	Material	Actor
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 2 - Clause 7]

[The invasion]	showed	that it [the MST] was broadening its range of targets
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[3] More than 30,000 MST protesters invaded land and federal buildings including offices belonging to the country's central bank, finance ministry and agrarian reform ministry. In some areas, heavily armed police used smoke grenades and rubber bullets to quell the demonstrations. One 30-year-old man died near the southern city of Curitiba after being shot in the stomach.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 8]

More than 30,000 MST protesters	invaded	land and federal buildings including offices belonging to (...)	
Actor	Material	Goal	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 9]

In some areas,	heavily armed police	used	smoke grenades and rubber bullets (...)
Circumstance	Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 10]

[Heavily armed police]	[quelled]	the demonstrations	
Actor	Material	Goal	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 11]

One 30-year-old man	died	near the southern city of Curitiba after being shot in the stomach	
Actor	Material	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme		

[4] The scale of the MST protests - which spanned the country from the Amazon to Rio de Janeiro - stunned President Fernando Henrique Cardoso, who issued a flurry of measures including the creation of a special police force charged with dispersing illegal settlers from land and public buildings. He also said that if peasants squat on land, their efforts to gain land titles will be delayed by at least two years.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 3 - Clause 12]

The scale of the MST protests	stunned	President Fernando Henrique Cardoso	
Phenomenon	Mental	Senser	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 13]

[The scale of the MST protests]	spanned	the country	from the Amazon to Rio de Janeiro
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 14]

[The President]	issued	a flurry of measures	including the creation of a special police force
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 15]

[The special police force]	[was] charged	with dispersing illegal settlers from land and public buildings	
Goal	Material	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 4 - Clause 16]

He	said	that if peasants squat on land, their efforts to gain land titles will be delayed by at (...)	
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage	
Theme	Rheme		

[5] The measures struck at the heart of the MST's long-held strategy of winning land disbursements by ordering squatters on to the vast swaths of arable, unused plots across Brazil. Through the success of this strategy the MST became one of South America's most important social movements, helping to redress the balance of land distribution in the continent's largest country, where half of the land is owned by a handful of wealthy families.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 17]

The measures	struck	at the heart of the MST's long-held strategy of winning land disbursements by (...)	
Actor	Material	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 18]

Through the success of this strategy	the MST	became	one of South America's most important (...)
Circumstance	Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 19]

[The MST]	[is] helping to redress	the balance of land distribution	in the continent's largest country
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 5 - Clause 20]

[In the continent's largest country]	half of the land	is owned	by a handful of wealthy families
Circumstance	Identifier	Relational	Identified
Theme	Rheme		

[6] But political analysts fear that Mr Cardoso's tough new measures may force the MST to become illegitimate, fuelling the radicalisation of a group that relies increasingly on confrontation with the government.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 21]

But	political analysts	fear	that Mr Cardoso's tough new measures
	Senser	Mental	Phenomenon
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 22]

[Mr Cardoso's tough new measures]	may force	[the MST's illegitimacy]
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 23]

The MST	[may possibly become]	illegitimate
Carrier	Relational	Attribute
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 24]

[The measures]	[may fuel]	the radicalisation of a group
Actor	Material	Goal
Theme	Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 6 - Clause 25]

[The radicalisation]	relies	on confrontation with the government
Actor	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme	

[7] "The government may have backed them into a blind alley," said David Fleischer, professor of politics at the University of Brasilia. "It's possible that the radicals will persuade them to become even more radical. If they do, Brazil is going to have a lot more problems."

[Text 6 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 26]

"The government may have backed them into a blind alley,"			said	David Fleischer
Verbiage		Verbal	Sayer	
Theme		Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 27]

[David Fleischer]	[is]	professor of politics at the University of Brasilia		
Identified	Relational	Identifier		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 6 - Paragraph 7 - Clause 28]

[Mr Fleischer]	[said]	"It's possible that the radicals will persuade them to become even more (...)"		
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage		
Theme	Rheme			

[8] Jaime Callegari, one of the MST's national coordinators, echoed the sentiments. "The Brazilian countryside is a powder keg right now. The conflict is going to be tougher than ever in the coming months and it is only a matter of time before there is more violence."

[Text 6 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 29]

Jaime Callegari	echoed	the sentiments		
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 6 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 30]

[Jaime Callegari]	[is]	one of the MST's national coordinators		
Identified	Relational	Identifier		
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 6 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 31]

"The Brazilian countryside is a powder keg right now."		[said]	[Jaime Callegari]	
Verbiage		Verbal	Sayer	
Theme		Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 31a]

"The conflict is going to be tougher than ever in the coming months and (...)"		[said]	[Jaime Callegari]	
Verbiage		Verbal	Sayer	
Theme		Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 8 - Clause 31b]

"It is only a matter of time before there is more violence."		[said]	[Jaime Callegari]	
Verbiage		Verbal	Sayer	
Theme		Rheme		

[9] As the MST steps up its actions hardline farmers have said that their patience is running out with peasants invading their land, with some saying that they will use guns to deter the squatters.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 32]

As	the MST	steps up	its actions
	Actor	Material	Goal
Theme		Rheme	

[Text 6 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 33]

Hardline farmers	have said	that their patience is running out with peasants invading their land	
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 9 - Clause 34]

Some	[are] saying	that they will use guns to deter the squatters	
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage	
Theme	Rheme		

[10] In what may turn out to be the first of many clashes, eight landless peasants in the state of Sergipe were injured last week when armed men drove them off property.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 35]

In	what	may turn out to be	the first of many clashes
	Identified	Relational	Identifier
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 36]

Eight landless peasants	in the state of Sergipe	were injured	last week
Goal	Circumstance	Material	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 10 - Clause 37]

Armed men	drove	them	off property
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[11] Since Mr Cardoso took power in 1994, his administration has given land titles to more than 250,000 families, more than were granted by his predecessors in the previous 30 years. But the MST says he is distributing too little, too slowly and then refusing to give financial help to make the land productive.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 38]

Since	Mr Cardoso	took	power	in 1994
	Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme			

[Text 6 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 39]

His administration	has given	land titles	to more than 250,000 families
Actor	Material	Goal	Beneficiary
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 40]

More [land] than	were granted	by his predecessors in the previous 30 years	
Goal	Material	Actor	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 41]

But	the MST	says	he is distributing too little, too slowly
	Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 11 - Clause 41a]

[The MST]	[says]	[he is]	refusing to give financial help to make the land productive
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage	
Theme	Rheme		

[12] The activists who stormed into buildings and farms last week aimed to put pressure on the finance minister, Pedro Malan, to release more money for small farmers. Members of the movement said they would not leave the federal buildings without securing a meeting with Mr Cardoso or Mr Malan, but they climbed down and left the properties after the president threatened to send in troops to evict them.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 42]

The activists (...)	stormed into	buildings and farms	last week
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 43]

[The activists]	aimed to put	pressure	on the finance minister, Pedro Malan, to release more money (...)
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 44]

Members of the movement	said	they would not leave the federal buildings without securing a (...)	
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 12 - Clause 45]

They	climbed down and left	the properties	after the president threatened to send in troops to evict them
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance
Theme	Rheme		

[13] The protests have come at a price. The broad support enjoyed by the MST has eroded recently as an increasing number of people - particularly former sympathisers among the middle classes - perceive the movement as becoming more political, more radical and more violent.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 46]

The protests	have come	at a price	
Actor	Material	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 47]

The broad support	enjoyed	by the MST	
Phenomenon	Mental	Senser	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 48]

[The broad support]	has eroded	recently	
Actor	Material	Circumstance	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 49]

[An increasing number of people]	perceive	the movement as becoming more political, more radical and (...)	
Senser	Mental	Phenomenon	
Theme	Rheme		

[Text 6 - Paragraph 13 - Clause 50]

[Former sympathisers (...)]			perceive	the movement as becoming more political, more radical and more (...)	
Senser	Mental	Phenomenon			
Theme		Rheme			

[14] The violence has also provoked opposition from traditional allies on the left who question the movement's drastic actions when land reform is moving at a faster pace than ever before.

[Text 6 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 51]

The violence	has provoked	opposition	from traditional allies on the left		
Actor	Material	Goal	Circumstance		
Theme		Rheme			

[Text 6 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 52]

[Traditional allies]	question	the movement's drastic actions when			
Sayer	Verbal	Verbiage			
Theme		Rheme			

[Text 6 - Paragraph 14 - Clause 53]

Land reform	is moving	at a faster pace than ever before			
Actor	Material	Circumstance			
Theme		Rheme			

Text #6

Stakes rise in Brazil's land battle

TOTALS

Total number of words in the text: 664 words

Total number of clauses analysed in the text: 53 clauses

Total number of occurrences of process types:

Material: 31 Material Processes

Mental: 05 Mental Processes

Relational: 07 Relational Processes

Behavioural: 00 Behavioural Processes

Verbal: 10 Verbal Processes

Existential: 00 Existential Processes